

# AMERICA'S RACE HERITAGE

---

CLINTON STODDARD BURR

# Ex Libris

SEYMOUR DURST

*t' Fort nieuw Amsterdam op de Manhatons*



FORT NEW AMSTERDAM



(NEW YORK), 1651.

When you leave, please leave this book  
Because it has been said  
"Ever'thing comes t' him who waits  
Except a loaned book."

OLD YORK LIBRARY — OLD YORK FOUNDATION



To

Shelby F. Strother

with the compliments of

Clinton S. Burr

Brooklyn, N.Y.

Oct. 20, 1930

AVERY ARCHITECTURAL AND FINE ARTS LIBRARY

GIFT OF SEYMOUR B. DURST OLD YORK LIBRARY



# AMERICA'S RACE HERITAGE





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2013



THE LANDING OF THE PILGRIMS



# America's Race Heritage

AN ACCOUNT OF THE DIFFUSION OF ANCESTRAL  
STOCKS IN THE UNITED STATES DURING  
THREE CENTURIES OF NATIONAL EXPAN-  
SION AND A DISCUSSION OF ITS SIGNIFICANCE

*By*  
CLINTON STODDARD BURR

*Illustrated*

NEW YORK  
THE NATIONAL HISTORICAL SOCIETY

1922

OFF-SITE

E

184

.A1

.B9

COPYRIGHT, 1922

BY THE NATIONAL HISTORICAL SOCIETY

---

*Set Up and Printed from Type*

*Published September, 1922*

TO MY WIFE  
AND  
TO MY MOTHER

40 X514

"Dear-bought and clear, a thousand year  
Our fathers' title runs.  
Make we likewise their sacrifice,  
Defrauding not our sons."

RUDYARD KIPLING.

"They crossed the prairies as of old  
Their fathers crossed the sea,  
To make the West, as they the East,  
The homestead of the free."

JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER.

"We primeval forests felling,  
We the rivers stemming, vexing we and piercing  
    deep the mines within,  
We the surface broad surveying, we the virgin  
    soil upheaving,  
Pioneers! O pioneers!

"Colorado men are we,  
From the peaks gigantic, from the great Sierras  
    and the high plateaus,  
From the mine and from the gully, from the hunt-  
    ing trail we come,  
Pioneers! O pioneers!

WALT WHITMAN.



## CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
FOREWORD - - - - -	I
INTRODUCTION - - - - -	19
I TRADITIONAL AMERICA - - - - -	31
II THE "OLD" IMMIGRANT STOCK (EARLY PERIOD)	90
III THE "OLD" IMMIGRANT STOCK (MODERN PERIOD)	100
IV THE "NEW" IMMIGRANT STOCK - - - - -	113
V THE RACIAL FACTOR - - - - -	129
VI THE COLORED ELEMENTS - - - - -	142
VII ASSIMILATION AND HEREDITY - - - - -	168
VIII THE IMMIGRATION PROBLEM - - - - -	177
IX THE EXPLOITER AND THE SENTIMENTALIST	
REFUTED - - - - -	184
X THE RACIAL ASPECT: NORDIC AMERICA - - -	306
XI THE RACIAL ASPECT: FOREIGN RELATIONS AND	
WORLD WELFARE - - - - -	216
XII CONCLUSION - - - - -	230
NOTES - - - - -	234
APPENDIX - - - - -	316
BIBLIOGRAPHY - - - - -	325
INDEX - - - - -	329



## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

The Landing of the Pilgrims .....	Frontispiece
	Facing Page
Signing the Compact in the Cabin of the "Mayflower" .....	4
The Thirteen Colonies on the Atlantic Seaboard—Map .....	16
The Huguenots in the Carolinas .....	24
The Burning of Jamestown, Virginia, by Indians in 1622 .....	32
Early Block House, A Defence Against the Indians .....	36
The First Church, Within a Stockade, at Middletown, Connecticut .....	36
Original American Territory Occupied by Nordic Colonists, and the Regions Into Which They Ex- panded—Map .....	40
Penn Giving the Constitution to Pennsylvania .....	46
The Wyoming Massacre .....	56
The Canestoga Wagon .....	64
Map of Louisiana, 1880 .....	68
Emigrant Train Bound for the Great West .....	72
Map of the Routes of the Pioneers .....	74
Pioneer Life in the West .....	80
The "Forty-Niners" .....	82
Indians Attacking An Emigrant Train .....	84
Monterey Mission, California .....	86

Type of Steamer Which Brought Over Many Early Immigrants .....	96
Castle Garden, New York City .....	104
The Far West Penetrated by the First Railroad .....	112
Crossing the Colorado Desert .....	120
Map of the Southern Highlands .....	136
Redskins of the Eastern Seaboard .....	142
Indians of the Plains .....	144
George Washington—Of Unmixed English Ancestry .....	206
J. Fenimore Cooper—of Combined English and Swed- ish Descent .....	208
John Jay—Two-fifths French Huguenot and Three- fifths Dutch Ancestry .....	210
DeWitt Clinton—of Anglo-Irish and Flemish Descent .....	214







## FOREWORD

The author of the following discourse is an average citizen of this Republic, who perceives that the American People are on the threshold of the greatest crisis in their history. This volume, then, is intended primarily as a study of the significant facts respecting the population of the nation. The time is ripe to co-ordinate the essential data derived from a multitudinous variety of national records, for the edification of the present generation and those to come.

Obviously such a survey as this may not avoid dissertations on such subjects as immigration, heredity, the birth rate and other problems inevitably linked with the study of mankind. But only the salient issues of these kindred topics shall be touched upon in this survey, in order to conform to the desires of those who are not inclined to delve into scientific treatises or voluminous statistics.

A wide vista of fascinating fields of historical, anthropological and statistical research is open to those of us who would gain a deeper insight of the problem that faces the American people today and in the future. The writer feels that in imparting these views his motive is wholly a patriotic one, and he can only invoke the reader to peruse these lines in the same spirit. We all know how futile are learned discourses in appealing to the pre-occupied business, professional, trades or agricultural men of the nation. Yet it is just these influential elements that can bring pressure to bear on our lawmakers

to save the United States in its great crisis. The average person can very quickly envisage the economic side of any question, for that concerns his pocketbook. But, unfortunately, many Americans are too busy, or too indifferent, to delve into what appears to be the dry complexities of anthropology and sociology. Yet these very subjects, dry perhaps in themselves, are the fountain of ideas that concern the heritage of millions of human beings yet unborn. Therefore, may a citizen be allowed to present to his countrymen, in plain, unembellished language, the cardinal views derived from the researches of present-day anthropologists, historians, economists, sociologists and biologists?

Millions of years lie before the human race. With this stupendous thought, can we survey the events of today from the standpoint of money-lust or exploitation? Or shall we rather regard the tasks of the present era as the forerunners of marvelous civilizations to come?

After all, to the keen observer, nothing can be so interesting as people, whether viewed individually or collectively. It was Pope himself who originated the phrase that the "proper study of mankind is man."

So now in the twentieth century we find this same doctrine formulated by a modern scientist, in the person of Dr. Karl Pearson (professor of eugenics of the University of London and President of the anthropological section of the British Association for Advancement of Science), who said, upon the occasion of the opening session of the Association at Cardiff, "If the spirit of violence be innate in man, if there be times when he not only sees red, but rejoices in it, then outbreaks of violence will not cease till troglodyte mentality is bred out of man. That is why the question of troglodyte or hylobatic ancestry is such a vital problem to the State." Incidentally Dr. Pearson paid high tribute to American



development of the science of anthropology, as compared to that in his own country, and declared that in the United States anthropology is no longer a "step-child of the State."

Yet Dr. Pearson's kind remarks are by no means the signal for Americans to become comfortably complacent.<sup>1</sup> In fact, it is high time that we should comprehend the primary cause of the loathsome plague of anarchy and Bolshevism.<sup>2</sup> It is time that we should be alive to the fact that most of the hordes of immigrants who have been pouring into the United States from countries of Southern and Eastern Europe, from lands inhabited by races impregnated with radicalism, Bolshevism and anarchy, belong for the most part to the lower strata of humanity from those regions, who prove to be most susceptible to the wiles of the radical agitator. Surely this view, in itself, is a logical plea in advocating restriction of a certain class of immigration.

The opening of a comparatively new field of thought within the past two decades has interested a multitude of lay readers through the medium of newspaper and magazine. The amount of comment from this source is prodigious—a sure sign of the gathering forces to promote race welfare. Of course many conflicting views have often played at cross-purposes and have perhaps led to confusion in the minds of many. Nevertheless the outlook looms very encouraging.

All thinking people are awakened to the realization that we must choose our future entrants to this country from such as show assimilable qualities of mind as well as favorable physical attributes. The callous exploiters of cheap labor and the incurable sentimentalists stand alone in their misplaced loyalty to our fatuous boast in the past that America was the haven of the down-and-out, the dependent, the oppressed, the pauper, the for-

eign agitator, the unassimilable and what not.<sup>8</sup>

It seemed almost providential that the year 1920 ushered in the Pilgrim Tercentenary at Plymouth Rock; for with the dogmas of Bolshevism and ultra-radicalism, not to mention hyphenism, attempting to demoralize the American spirit, the country-wide Pilgrim celebrations combated these insidious dangers by bringing home to Americans, somewhat cynical as the result of the Greatest War and an unsettled reconstruction period, the true significance of the sterling virtues, the character, self-denial, stability, perseverance and faith of our ancestors.

The celebrations throughout America, and in England, Holland and Canada, commemorated not alone the three hundredth anniversary of the Pilgrims voyage, or the development of the Puritan idea in the New World, or the founding of New England communities, or the customs and ideals of the Puritan stock. They commemorated above all, our three hundred years of expansion over a vast continent; in the main an Anglo-Saxon conquest over savagery and natural forces. It was a celebration of three hundred years of American achievement.

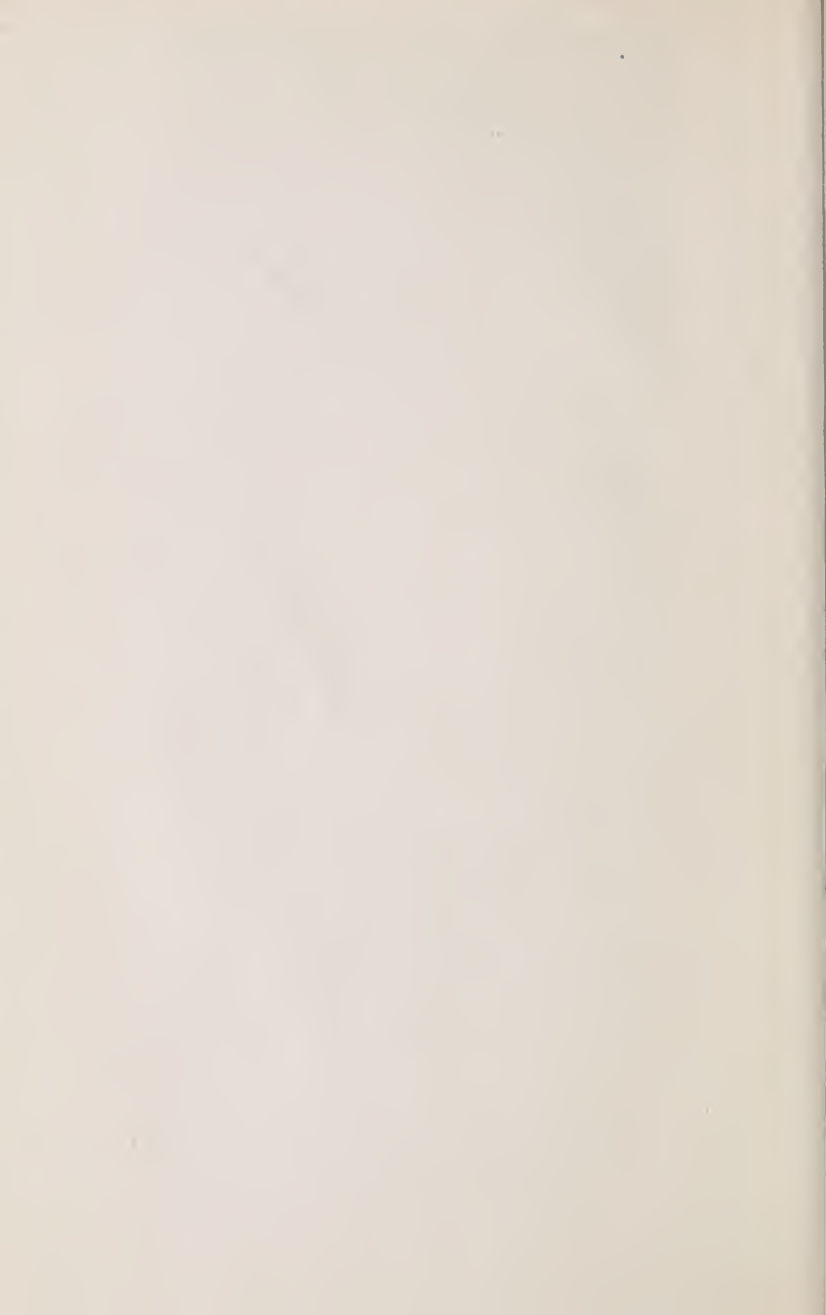
It must not be forgotten that English thought, laws and government permeated the land from the arrival of the Mayflower up to the present day. Anglo-Saxon civilization actually gained a new stimulus by the defiance of a weak and unscrupulous monarch in 1776, and today the Englishman and the American are approaching the goal of perfect mutual and reciprocal relations tending to the welfare not alone of Anglo-Saxon communities, but also of the whole world. The present frontiers of the American people lie in the expansion of our influence in world affairs for the betterment of all mankind.

Certainly the strength of the American experiment throughout its three hundred years is based on the re-



SIGNING THE COMPACT IN THE CABIN OF THE  
"MAYFLOWER"

The First Written Constitution Establishing Self-Government in  
the History of the World



ligious motive and pioneering spirit dating from the Mayflower community. The Tercentenary must remind us that our adventure in the future of our national life must be met in the same spirit that characterized the sturdy devotion to duty and ideals on the part of our Pilgrim Forefathers. The significance of the three centuries of American growth was briefly, but aptly, described by the British Ambassador, Sir Auckland Geddes, in the following words:<sup>4</sup>

"We have, in fact, to maintain the heritage of freedom against assault from within and without, the priceless heritage of a great idea conceived by the Nordic people and slowly and painfully brought into practice in workable form in England, then brought here and developed and strengthened, then passed to British Dominions, then transplanted into countries that never have understood it. It is now in danger from its popularity. Even its enemies try to conceal their actions behind its phrases."

Thus it would seem that the year which brought an end to the most momentous decade in American history will be the beginning of a new era, in which the American people will realize more than ever that our social problems can be traced to the favoring or unfavoring racial dispersions that called into being, or reacted upon, our institutions and aspirations.

When one member of a household contracts a terrible disease, are not the other members of the household held to be liable to contagion? Then why do we still allow the dregs of Southern and Eastern European nations to swarm into our community by the thousands every day, when we know that there are hundreds of active or potential Bolsheviks among them who may not be discovered under our hurried and superficial mental and literacy tests?

While our well-meaning citizens are regaling new immigrants with Americanization talks, some of their very folk are blowing up American citizens in Wall Street and even the less dangerous of the radical element live in compact communities that send their radical representatives to our legislatures.

However, all this is merely the outward menace of a situation of deep biological significance. The situation threatens not alone ourselves, but in an insidious racial degree menaces the blood and character of our descendants to infinite generations; and thus imminently threatens the stability, genius and promise of achievement of the American Commonwealth.

Then shall we indifferently countenance the doctrine, "After us the deluge," or shall we assert the rights of a great majority of Americans and protect future generations?

Why have we in the past fostered the hobby of the "melting pot," which aimed to attempt the absorption of all nationalities or races and to level the scale between Americans and aliens? Why attempt to force Americanization of people we know to be loyal to foreign lands and alien doctrines, when we admitted them without obligation to become Americans? Do we desire a mongrel population in America such as that which gave birth to sovietism in Russia?

Americanization can never be more than a temporary alleviation, and can never be a preventive, in the light of biological truth. Mixed blood in mammals produces the mongrel. Practically all hybrids in plant life are worthless. Biology, it is generally recognized, has proved the baneful effects of mixed race in the human species. Many a warped brain that menaces world politics in our modern day may be attributed to the mongrel blood of the individual.



Shall the old American stock, with blood and traditions antedating the Republic, give place to a Bolshevik Empire or a Sicilian breeding-ground, as the native birth rate declines amidst the gradually lowered standard of living? It is undeniable that America has already retrograded in more ways than one owing to the unassimilated immigrant blood of the last forty years. We have changed in a subconscious degree.<sup>5</sup>

This brings us to the problem of immigration, the "livest question in the world today."

It is noteworthy that the year 1920 marked the culmination of a century of recorded immigration. We are at the threshold of a new era which must be regarded as the most critical in the entire history of the immigrant tide. In other words, it is coming to be recognized that the services of unassimilable people are not a recompense for the necessity of incorporating them in our social framework. The United States is facing one of the great emergencies, if not the greatest, of its history. The family skeleton, which we tried so hard to hide from ourselves in our aggrandizement, is at last come to light.

Warren G. Harding said in a campaign speech on September 14, 1920: "There is abundant evidence of the dangers which lurk in racial differences. I do not say racial inequalities—I say racial differences. . . .

"The problem incident to racial differences must be accepted as one existing in fact and must be adequately met for the future security and tranquility of our people. We have learned during the anxieties of the World War the necessity of making the citizenship of this Republic not only American in heart and soul, but American in every sympathy and every aspiration.

"No one can tranquilly contemplate the future of this Republic without an anxiety for abundant provision for

admission to our shores of only the immigrant who can be assimilated and thoroughly imbued with the American spirit.

"We have come to that stage of our development which of necessity must be assumed by those who accept the grant of American opportunity. From this time on we are more concerned with the making of citizens than we are with adding the man power of industry or the additional human units in our varied activities.

"As a people and a nation . . . we do have the moral, the natural and the legal international rights to determine who shall or who shall not enter our country and participate in our activities.

"With a new realization of the necessity of developing a soul distinctly American in this Republic we favor such modification of our immigration laws, and such changes in our international understandings, and such a policy relating to those who come among us, as will guarantee to the citizens of this country not only assimilability of alien-born, but the adoption by all who come of American standards, economic and otherwise, and a full consecration to American practices and ideals."

The puzzling question is, Why do we let them come? Do the American people control the United States, or are they subject to the weird alliance of great employers of cheap labor, alienism catering to hyphenated communities, and internationalism at variance with the national spirit, which attempts to undermine the patriotism of our law-makers in Congress? Are we under obligation to the nations of Southern and Eastern Europe, that we must allow them to dump their poorest quality of manhood on our shores?<sup>6</sup> Are we compelled to allow steamship companies to profit thereby?

The true American of whatever race recognizes the fact that cheap labor is not cheap, but that it will eventually



ruin American industry and undermine our heritage; that foreign communities in America that wish to swell their own particular nationalities or co-religionists in our population are merely sowing the discords of the Old World in what should be a unified republic; and that from the cheap alien laborers of today are recruited the radicals of the future.<sup>7</sup>

Americans regard the Atlantic Ocean as a very effectual barrier to avert conquest by a European nation or nations. Yet the ocean facilitates rather than hinders the seemingly peaceful, but none the less destructive invasion of unassimilable aliens.<sup>8</sup> For it is easier for Southern and Eastern Europeans to cross the sea than to migrate within Europe. But incidentally it is also easier and less expensive to transport immigrants across the sea than to distribute them throughout the United States upon their arrival, as a result of which we may observe the congested foreign communities in the great cities of our Eastern States.

In the following pages I shall attempt to set forth the circumstances leading up to the existing composition of the American people, in addition to conditions that prevail relative to the modern population of our country. For it must be remembered that the actual composition of the American stock is directly attributable to the migrations of Old World peoples to North America. In other words, to the citizen of the United States, immigration should be a matter of the greatest interest, in its direct bearing on a subject of paramount importance—the actual makeup of the American people.<sup>9</sup>

The review of immigration may be divided for convenience into three periods. The first is the period before 1790, really an era of exploration, colonization and expansion. The second period includes the recorded immigration stream up to the decade of the "seventies,"

The third period relates to the modern industrial stream which supplies, in general, the yet unsolved social problems in respect to the immigrant community.

With the constant influx of foreign types, the average citizen asks with increasing bewilderment the question: What is an American? And the very looseness of the term, as interpreted in the minds of many, has led to even lawless policies of hyphenism, which appear to be quite as rampant today as during the recent war. In fact it is not too much to say that hyphenism has become very closely linked with our foreign as well as domestic policies. The "foreign vote" is a power reckoned with by American politicians, however much we may abhor the principle involved.

Unfortunately, the average American maintains vague ideas respecting the racial composition of his countrymen, unless, of course, he has been enabled to rid himself of false preconceptions of race absorbed in the many years of the past when modern doctrines were yet in embryo. And it is this very ignorance of racial truths that is to blame for the hyphenism and national hatreds that thrust themselves upon a long-suffering humanity.

But what applies to alienism within, as regards the general indifference of people toward racial questions, is equally applicable to the relationships of all nations, including the United States. In fact national hatred is the parent of hyphenism. In line with these statements, we may gain some food for thought in the ideas of Dr. Pearson, to whom we have previously alluded. He once pointed out that not alone physical measurement, but also psychometry and what he terms vigorimetry of races should become the main subjects of anthropometry. In this view he contended that anthropology should be recognized as a leading science by the state and be regarded as important by statesmen, manufacturers and commer-

cial men alike. He admitted that if the science of mankind had been developed to the extent of physical science there might still have been a World War, but he ventured to say that the war would have been of a different character and that society and culture might not have been hung in the balance, and that the treaty of Versailles would have been ethnologically more sound than it is today. He suggested that trade with foreign countries would depend upon the practical applications of anthropological knowledge through those consuls, missionaries, traders, travelers and others trained academically to understand both savage and civilized people. He deplored the fact that the bitter hatreds augmented by the World War have almost blotted out all true historical concepts. "The future," he added, "must develop a different knowledge of history and a more practical statesmanship resulting from that knowledge."

As a rule, when a man is asked his nationality, he replies with the name of the country in which he was born. But when that same man is asked from what race he springs, he is wholly at a loss, or else compromises, ruminates, or vaguely and intangibly suggests that certain ancestors originated in this or that country years ago, provided that he has interested himself in the subject of genealogy. And yet the blood of many different nationalities may flow in that man's veins. No man in the Old World or the New can boast of unmixed nationality back to the dawn of history. The mixture of nationalities can never be unraveled. When this fact is at last recognized, and true racial concepts become the code of statesmen, the national boundaries that now define the "crazy-quilt" of Europe will be abolished, and European turmoil will die down, perhaps altogether.

On the other hand, there are undeniable and profound racial, temperamental, cultural and social differences be-

tween such peoples, for instance, as the Jugoslavs, Sicilians, Polish Jews and Swedes. But these are fundamental differences due to the race and race development of each of those peoples. Every European nationality will show evidence of several racial strains. Thus it is possible to find dark-haired folk among the blond population of Scandinavia, or to discover light-complexioned types in the population of the Po basin, or even, indeed, within the dark community of Southern Italy. Obviously, then, we must characterize a nationality by its prevailing or predominant racial strain. For whereas the individual person may trace a pure ancestry in vain; a nation's character, on the other hand, is indubitably linked with its past racial existence.

Now that the United States is playing, and is destined to continue to play, an unprecedented part in European affairs, and now that jealous excitements are rampant throughout the World, it becomes increasingly important that Europe should understand the racial character of the American people, and that the latter should be equally informed in racial matters. Indeed, Americans must know the truth of their own make-up in order to establish correct relations with their foreign neighbors. Unfortunately, some national antagonisms are actually the result of bad education with respect to racial truths.

It is surprising to find among the nations of Europe who have had the longest experience in dealing with foreign communities, and whose archives harbor multitudinous statistics of barbarous lands thousands of miles away, an appalling ignorance of the truths concerning the American people. Even England, which because of her language, blood and ideals should be able to understand America and her population, utterly failed to regard the United States as other than a pot-pourri of states of foreign character—until the war awoke her to

a new train of thought. This has led to a laudable intention of the part of English men of letters to write instructively for the benefit of the British reading public on the subject of America and her destiny. As yet, however, no English writer has thoroughly grasped the significance of America's stock of mankind.<sup>10</sup>

The question of the composition of the American people brings us inevitably to the one source of adequate official information; that is, the Census of the United States. The first enumeration of the Census Bureau occurred in the year 1790, and this was followed by a decennial Census in every decade thereafter, up to the Fourteenth Census in the year 1920, which post-bellum tabulation discloses the important population changes which have come to pass during the last momentous decade.

According to general belief, the Census Bureau deals with statistics and computations rated as "dry as dust." Yet underneath all this vast mass of information there lie truths of a fascinating nature that need only to be adequately brought forth to present the material for a volume that might be aptly described as "The Racial Adventures of the United States."

It is true that to the average person statistics, even at best, are a bugbear, and for that reason the writer will confine himself in every way possible merely to the salient features of the aforementioned official sources. Yet, at the same time, it must be recognized that, in the words of Edmund Burke, "Facts are to the mind the same thing as food to the human body. On the due digestion of facts depends the strength and wisdom of the one, just as vigor and health depend on the other." So, when applied to the people of America, those statistics which are essential to the subject in hand may become the magic wand that brings forth in sharp and convinc-



ing relief the attributes of the American people—the moral force of the souls and minds of men and women who have become masters of a continent and, if they will it so, of its destiny.

The solution of most of the great social problems is indissolubly linked with the results of the Census, including immigration, the growth or decline of racial elements, the numbers of defectives and illiterates and their source, the elements engaged in various vocations and the vital statistics. Yet even the Census Bureau can hardly be regarded as having wholly reached a point of adequate efficiency, from the standpoint of the anthropologist, sociologist, economist, biologist, historian or statistician.

Beginning an editorial of November, 1920, the American Review of Reviews says: "The average man or woman does not reach important convictions as to private conduct or public policy by reading tables of comparative statistics in the newspapers. Even if the figures are examined at all they are studied casually, and the inferences popularly drawn from the tabulated data are seldom definite or useful. Yet such information as the Census Bureau at Washington affords us every ten years in comparative tables is of the most profound importance. It is worthy of the closest attention of millions of people, as bearing upon their own personal affairs, and upon public policy. . . . There are questions involved in the census reports that are of vastly greater consequence to the people of the United States than the matters of debate that have absorbed most of the attention of speakers and writers in the . . . political campaign.

"The chief business of the United States hitherto—looking to the country's future—has been the creation of an American nationality. Far more desirable than mere growth in numbers are evidences of the right kind of de-

velopment. When the Census Bureau and other agencies for obtaining accurate information show us that, in one way or another, the nation's development is proceeding wrongly, we have before us the duty of correcting harmful tendencies.

"It is well, on the announcement of the main facts that are ascertained every ten years by the Census Bureau, to study thoroughly the tendencies that are indicated, and to help the public to grasp the lessons that should be learned. Up to a certain point sheer growth makes for strength. Beyond that, uneven or discordant growth may make for weakness. It is worth many times what the Census taking costs to have the figures as an aid to intelligent statesmanship."

From a viewpoint more or less in keeping with the above, the present writer undertakes to set forth certain interesting facts hitherto obscured by reason of the vast intricacies of the Census Reports.

Up to about the beginning of the last decade, the Census Bureau published no abstract figures which would throw light on the actual racial composition of our country, other than the elusive statistics of "native white" and "foreign white"; so that for many years experts attempted to analyse the racial composition of the white inhabitants with results of little scientific value.<sup>11</sup> In fact, many of these estimates proved startling in their diversity; this being particularly true of the distorted figures of certain German-American statisticians, whose exaggerated claims as to the size of the German element in America were eagerly seized upon by pro-German propagandists in the period leading up to and during the late war.<sup>12</sup> Thus is illustrated the danger that lies in the ignorance of the general public regarding population facts. As a further illustration it may be mentioned that the Sinn Fein movement of a later date

inspired the representatives of the Sinn Fein in America to appear before Congress with the plea that "20,000,000 Irishmen<sup>13</sup> in the United States favored an Irish Republic."

Now it is not to be suspected that the more intelligent leaders of the Sinn Fein actually believed it to be a fact, as this statement inferred, that there were twenty million folk of predominantly Gaelic Irish stock in the United States in 1920. But the undeniable strength of this Sinn Fein battle-cry lay in the fact that the masses of the American people were too indifferent to combat the assertion that nearly a fifth of the American people were Irish Catholics, while at the same time the ignorant element among the Sinn Feiners were inflamed to new deeds of violence in this country, in the false notion that they were upheld by a powerful constituency throughout the land not unlike that to be found in New York or Boston. And, as a matter of fact, this undue clamor, and the exploitation of the important because cohesive "Irish vote," might well have given an exaggerated impression as to the number of persons in this country who claimed descent from Gaelic Irishmen.<sup>14</sup>

It is time to efface all such gross inaccuracies and misstatements, which are borne out by neither history nor the Census enumerations, at a time when we must, without being necessarily reactionary, foster all the early traditions of our Nordic forefathers. Hence this survey will undertake to show, among other things, that this country is not yet a hodge-podge of alien-minded people, and that our foreign policy cannot therefore be guided by hyphenated groups.<sup>15</sup>

Three centuries have passed since the Mayflower brought the Pilgrims to New England. In that comparatively short era America became filled with a breed of folk, Nordic in stock, who have developed a social,





## THE THIRTEEN COLONIES ON THE ATLANTIC SEABOARD

Where the Bulk of the Population Remained Down to 1790



economic and political life that will exist as long as the Nordic strain in America survives—and that must of necessity be for some decades yet. The fact that our blood, institutions, common law, form of government, language, traditions and ideals are essentially Puritan and Cavalier does not set aside the other fact that a large number of our forefathers were of German, Irish or other nationality, whose descendants have equally shared in the development of a great nation of Nordic heritage. There is no place in this country for any tendency to laud any particular foreign nationality at the expense of any other element in our population. All nationalities must be gradually absorbed and transformed into the formula of our Nordic civilization, or else remain aliens in the land. Any brand of hyphenism merely caters to the views of various European nations that covertly regard us as of most varied and heterogeneous stock, when as a matter of fact we are not—as yet.

In the pages that follow the colored population will be dealt with in a merely summary fashion, and will be considered after the more thorough analysis of the white element of our population; for the reason that the latter presents a more complicated subject of inquiry. As a matter of fact, the census reports have always clearly differentiated between the “white” and “colored” populations, and have further classified the latter into its main component parts, including the considerable Negro element, the aboriginal Indians and the Chinese and Japanese communities. For the purposes of this survey, the Mexicans and Turks will also, for the most part, be included among the colored inhabitants, although they are not so specified in the Census reports.

Many of the assertions in this volume are substantiated by a greater or less number of the foremost scientific minds in the country today, and it is impossible to give

the opinions of all within such limited space. In fact, frequently the views set forth are so apparent, on the face of them, that their prolonged discussion would be unnecessary. To those interested in the allied subjects considered herein there is available a multitude of varied and detailed sources concerning the points brought out in this survey. A partial list of several of the more significant works related to these subjects will be found in the appended Bibliography.

CLINTON STODDARD BURR.

New York, May, 1922.

## INTRODUCTION

In entering upon a reasonably practical survey of the composition of the American people, one point must be constantly borne in mind; that national life is a product created by successive generations from time immemorial. Thus, before we can portray the origin, expansion and development of the population of the United States during three centuries of colonization and immigration, is it not necessary to trace at least a brief outline of the racial migrations since the dawn of history?

To be sure, it is difficult to describe adequately the race life of the progenitors of the American people in any work not composed of numerous volumes; nor does the purpose of this survey warrant deep research in that direction. Yet, on the other hand, it may not be inappropriate to consider briefly the race migrations in Eurasia as a prelude to the racial history of America. In other words, there are certain essential facts of evolution and migration on the Eurasian continent that must necessarily be visualized in order to gain a fundamental concept of early history in its direct bearing upon our race life in America, past, present and future.

From what scientists know of history and anthropology, it seems evident that the human races originated in Central Asia. Unfortunately, archaeological research

in these regions has not attained the same degree as that in Europe, owing to the difficulties and dangers of pioneering in vast, untraveled wastes and among savage, unresponsive primitive folk. Even as this volume goes to press the scientific world and Americans in general are apprized of the journey of Professor Roy Chapman Andrews and his companions into Central Asia, where they propose comprehensive archeological researches for a period of three years. The anthropological data which they collect may prove surprising.

We do know, however, that Aryan-speaking invaders passed through the Himalaya passes over two thousand years before our own times and eventually imposed their language and, at least to some extent, their civilization upon the brown and yellow folk of India. Indications of Caucasian strains in certain parts of China, Manchuria and northern Japan, as well as among the Burmese Indonesians and Polynesians, and the presence of Aryan languages in India, and the western corner of the Chinese Empire, not forgetting the dead Tokarian language of Turkestan (recently discovered to have existed eleven centuries ago in the latter region) seem to assure us of the widespread dispersion of white races in Asia during prehistoric times.

Climatic conditions at the close of the Pliocene period apparently imposed a changed race life that developed into the modern civilization that characterizes the progressive peoples of the world. Certain peoples seem never to have benefited from any stimulating impetus or growth and today we find human beings still existent who are hardly above the ape in brain power. In the regions lying beyond Eurasia, the primitive folk, whether Negroes, Amerinds or Negroids, have never developed an adequate civilization. Even the admittedly considerable culture of the Incas, Aztecs and other ancient folk of Central and South America appears to have been some-

what exaggerated by the Conquistadors, nor are we certain that these progressive peoples were not, at least in part, of Eurasian blood.

Certain it is that today civilization can only be identified with the people of Europe and certain more progressive folk of Asia. In the latter continent are to be found only vague traces of the white blood that was once, perhaps, so prevalent, and as for the pure Nordic types that we are accustomed to see among certain Europeans, there are none at all, except by comparatively recent infusion from Europe.

Thus we may surmise that it was constant warfare between Aryan and Mongoloid races that drove the former into India as the Sanskrit folk; into Persia and Mesopotamia as Persians, Mitanni and Kassites; into the Balkans as Achaeans, Dorians, Phrygians, Thracians and Illyrians; into Italy as the Latin-speaking patricians of Rome; into Western Europe as the Celts; and, finally, throughout Western Europe as the Germanic tribes in their folk-wandering.

Science is not yet able to prove incontestably that the fair Nordic tribesmen of western Europe introduced the Aryan languages into Europe, but most of the evidence points in that direction. Nevertheless, both the Mediterranean and Alpine races must have greatly influenced the development of Aryan tongues through the centuries, which may account for the marked differences to be found among certain lingual groups in Europe.

It is to be observed that the Teutonic Nordics, who were to found the great Anglo-Saxon, German, French and Scandinavian civilizations, and who stimulated the Italian Restoration, were actually the last of the Aryan folk to step out of their role as forest barbarians and aspire to the heights of destiny. This strengthens us in



the view that these Nordic folk were even in prehistoric times potentially great, and that they may have developed a culture which they had no time to record for posterity, in the midst of their death-grapple with the Mongoloids. Thus it was the Nordic tribes who acted as the rear guard for the pre-Teutonic Nordics who first claimed Europe for civilization. And it was these same vigorous Nordic "barbarians" who, under their great leader Charlemagne, at last flung back the Moslem hordes and saved Europe for Christianity, and who set up a frontier of feudal states between the Adriatic and the Baltic, that developed into the outposts of the Holy Roman Empire.

The struggles between Europe and Asia were extended over a period of many centuries. The Arabs challenged Europe in the South, but a far greater menace must have been the ruthless Mongolian invasions from Asia, beginning with Attila, the "scourge of God," and his ruthless Huns, who actually broke through into Nordic lands, but were defeated by Aetius and Theodoric at Méry-sur-Seine, near Châlons. The later waves of Avars, Bulgars, Magyars, Patzinaks and Cumans forced their way only as far as the lands which are now the Balkans, where they merged their blood with the Alpine population. Then came Genghiz Khan with his Mongol horde, who conquered Hungary, Poland and Southern Russia. However, some of these invasions of yellow folk were more or less peaceful, as in the case of the great Empire of the Khazars. These latter adopted Judaism, even as the Asiatic settlers in the Balkans had accepted Christianity.

All Asia fell before the terrible Golden Horde. Untold millions were put to the sword. Russia, Poland and Eastern Europe were prostrate before the Tartars. The infusion of pure Mongolian blood into the Alpine



population was an inevitable result of these conquests. Then at last the vast army of the Tartars, under Batu Khan, reeking from the slaughters they had perpetrated in conquered Russia, triumphantly advanced against the hopelessly outnumbered little army of Teutonic Knights and Silesians. But the so-called defeat of that army of Nordic fighting men was actually the repulse of the Mongol Horde, and Northwest Europe from that day forth was assured a breed of pure-blooded Nordic white people, with none of the mongrel character that had overtaken the populations to the eastward.

The struggles between the Nordic and the Mediterranean and Semitic races lasted thousands of years, during which period the vast wastes of Asia, Europe and Africa were filled.

When the Nordics burst into Western Europe, they found the Alpine population stretching to the Atlantic, and the Mediterranean folk occupying all Spain, Southern France and Italy. These Nordics appear to have gravitated toward the warmer climes in considerable numbers, but it is a significant fact that, wherever they "conquered," their blood was soon lost in the more perfectly acclimated strain of the exploited folk. Thus the blood of the Suevi and Visigoths is a vanishing characteristic of Northern Spain; the few remaining Gothic types found among the gentry of Southern France are a mere memory of past glories; the blood of the classic Greek and the noble Roman patrician has mostly disappeared; and only traces are to be found of Teutonic conquests of Italy, particularly in the North of the peninsula, where the Nordic strain was responsible for the glories of the Italian Renaissance. Even in the Atlas Mountains there are dim traces of Nordic blood which may be a memory of the Vandals who pushed into North Africa, while in Syria we find traces of what may have

been the blood of the Crusaders, who for two centuries contested with the Moslems for the possession of the Holy Land. Obscure traces of Nordic blood are found even among the savage Kurds. But such ethnic remnants are unimportant when we consider the vast masses of Mediterraneans that now populate Southern Europe, North Africa and the Levant. The Arab invasion was stopped at Tours, but the blood of the Mediterranean has gained at the expense of the Frankish nobility in Southern France up to the present day.

There have obviously been some changes in the ethnic character of Europe since the day when the Pilgrims landed in America three centuries ago. The drain on the Nordic stock of the various countries of Western Europe has been prodigious, no doubt, both from destructive wars and by the emigration of Nordics from the homeland. For it is one of the most essential characters of the Nordic that he is the soldier, the pioneer and the organizer, in any community where he holds sway. For instance, the early Puritan and Cavalier settlers in America were of the purest Nordic blood of the British Isles, as were also the later Scotch-Irish pioneers. The early German settlement of Pennsylvania and later emigration is known to have drained Southern Germany of much of its finest Nordic stock; and the Huguenots of France, who were forced out of their country, represented the purest Nordic type to be found among the gentry of that period. Likewise the later immigration into America must have brought at least a proportionate share of Nordic stock from Europe.

Thus today we find the British Isles still preponderantly Nordic, with traces of Mediterranean blood throughout Wales, among the Cockneys, in the Fen country, in Western Ireland and in Western Scotland. The Nordic race predominates in Northern and Western



THE HUGUENOTS IN THE CAROLINAS



France, with an extension down the Rhone Valley; with the Alpine strain persisting in the Auvergne and Ardennes ranges and in Central Brittany; and the Mediterranean strain occupying Languedoc and Provence. The nobility and gentle folk throughout the country, however, indicate the area of Nordic conquest. Spain has probably never been a country of Nordics, although the Spanish gentry is proud of its Gothic ancestry. In the main this is a rather fatuous boast, although there are certainly pure Nordic types often to be found among the Catalans, Spaniards and Portuguese. Undoubtedly the conquest of the Americas drained the Peninsula of its finest Nordic strains. Italy is predominantly Iberian also, but in the North the Alpine stock appears to be very strong, if not actually predominant with a very considerable infusion of Nordic blood extending down from the passes of the Alps. Throughout Italy the gentry still retain traces of the blood of their Nordic ancestors. Greece and the Levant are now respectively Mediterranean and Assyroid countries. The Slavic type is gradually penetrating Greece from the North, however, and the Alpine race is crowding the fringe of Iberian population along the coast of Asia Minor. Even among the Greek gentry, the Nordic type is becoming increasingly rare. The west coast of the Black Sea, including eastern Rumania and eastern Bulgaria, is racially Mediterranean, but the rest of the Balkans is now distinctly of the Alpine Slav type. It has been thought that the height of certain Balkan mountaineers may betoken the presence of Nordic strains; but this is mere surmise. As a matter of fact mountain communities throughout the earth appear to be taller than plainsmen of the same race, provided they are not stunted through famine and deprivation. The Low Countries are Nordic in blood, but the peasantry of the Walloon provinces of Belgium

are Alpine, or at least partly so, in blood. Scandinavia is Nordic in blood, but even here we find traces of Alpine strains. The sea coast of Finland is distinctly Nordic, but as one proceeds inland the Alpine stock, as well as the primitive Finnish strain, becomes increasingly apparent. Northern Germany is predominantly Nordic, but as the Eastern or Southern boundaries are approached, the people appear to be decidedly saturated with Alpine blood. Switzerland, the Tyrol and German Austria are composed of a mixture of dominant Nordic and subordinate Alpine populations; and when we analyze the Magyar community, we find that the Alpine stock has become dominant and the Nordic subordinate, with very evident traces of the original Finno-Ugrian conquerors of Hungary. Germanic settlement must have occurred to some extent along the Danube and as far east as Transylvania, to judge from ethnic traces, and from the fact that Saxon communities in the latter region still retain their German language and customs. The Baltic Provinces are distinctly Nordic in type, whether from the blood of the original Letto-Lithuanian tribes, or from the constant infusions of blood from Germany and Scandinavia. The peasantry is of part Alpine or Finno-Ugrian strain, however, and the Esths, like the Finns and Magyars, still speak a Ugrian tongue. However, the marked blondness of the Balts, particularly among the gentry, is direct evidence of a proud ancestry. Indeed some attention must be tendered to the theory that the Aryans (Nordic or otherwise) originated in the Balticum, from the fact that the Letto-Lithuanians speak archaic European tongues related to Sanscrit.

Up to a line two hundred miles east of Petrograd we find the population of Russia to be relatively of pure Nordic type. Whether this fact is to be attributed to the original Slav-speaking Aryans of ancient Europe, to the Scandinavian Varangians who founded the Russian



Empire, or to the later infusions of Scandinavians and Germans, or from all of these factors, is a matter of controversy. Much of this Nordic blood has been lost to Russia by the departure of most of the nobility and many of the gentry throughout Russia, since the fall of the Czar and the rise of Bolshevism. As the traveler proceeds eastward from the Baltic provinces, the blond types gradually become diminished within the population. The vast plains of Russia must be regarded as lost to the Nordic race. Today the Alpine peasantry of Russia is exploited by the Bolshevik régime. And it must not be forgotten that underlying this Alpine strain is the blood of not yet forgotten Tartars who swarmed into Europe even up to ten decades after the Pilgrims landed in America. The "greasy" Ukrainians, the Cossacks and the peasantry of eastern Russia are undeniably Asiatic in origin. There is a profound gulf between the Polish or White Russian gentry and the peasantry of the half-Nordic buffer states between Germany and Russia.

Lastly we may mention the Jews. For the most part they are congregated within the ghetto of Poland, but they have spread over all Europe. There is a vast difference, racially as well as culturally, between the Jewish gentry and the ghetto types. This point will be discussed more fully in the pages to come. Suffice it to say here that the more progressive Jews of Western Europe, the Sephardim Jews, are probably the descendants of the true Jews, while the Ashkenazim, or ghetto Jews are, at least in part, the descendants of converts to Judaism under the old Khazar Empire.

It may appear that I have been neglectful of the racial history of the British Isles in this brief glance at European racial distribution, for the United States owes the greater part of its ethnic, political and social character

to the Nordics of the British Isles. After all, the history of Britain is more or less the study of cultures, rather than of race. Anthropology has come to attribute Celtic culture to pre-Teutonic Nordics, as far as the origin of the Celtic tongues is concerned. It is true that the development of Gaelic and Cymric dialects was largely from the hands of Iberian and (in Brittany) Alpine folk, but from all indications the Nords were the original possessors of Aryan speech. The great Celtic invasions which swept over Europe in prehistoric times brought the first Nordic strain to the British Isles in the persons of the Cymric Brythons and the Gaelic Scots, the latter merging with the Picts, who were probably the Iberian element in Scotland at that time. Druidism was probably developed from the mingled cultures of the Celts and the primitive Mediterranean inhabitants whom they had enthralled. The coming of the Romans probably had little influence on either the blood or culture of the British Isles. Possibly some of the blood of the Nordic patricians was lost in the surrounding Nordic populations, but there is no trace of vast accessions of that Mediterranean strain of Iberian plebeians, captives, mercenaries and slaves, such as were recruited to fill the armies of Rome in her declining years, in those particular parts of Britain occupied by the Romans. After the withdrawal of the Roman legions, the conquest of the Teutonic tribes from low-Germany and Denmark commenced, in about the middle of the fifth century. These Germanic tribes were the Angles, Saxons and Jutes, all of pure Nordic blood. Three and a half centuries later the Danes, or Northmen, invaded England. They were the same Norse "Vikings" from Scandinavia who were swarming to all parts of the coastline of Europe and even to the rockbound coasts of North America. Again in the tenth century, the Danes, of the same Scandinavian-



Nordic strain as the Norsemen, invaded England and, like their predecessors, became fused in the Anglo-Saxon stock. Then, after the middle of the eleventh century, occurred the conquest by the Normans, the French-speaking descendants of Vikings who had conquered, and settled in, Normandy on the coast of France. The influence of the comparatively cultured Normans upon the Anglo-Saxon inhabitants and their language and customs was very considerable. In fact the Normans, while they lost their French tongue, became to a great extent the landed nobility of the British Isles. Other lesser and peaceful invasions thereafter, such as that of the Flemish cloth-workers in Kent, merely added for the most part to the predominant Nordic stock of Britain.

It must be borne in mind, however, that the fruits of the mingling and commingling of Celtic, low-German and Norse tribes with the primitive inhabitants of Albion are summed up in the general opinion of anthropologists: That only two important racial strains are to be recognized in the population of Britain, of which the Nordic is predominant, and the Mediterranean (Iberian) subordinate and not to be considered in relation to even so shadowy a designation as "culture."

It must be understood, also, that neither here, nor in the pages to follow, is it my purpose to dwell upon the achievements of the mother countries of Europe which have contributed their sons and daughters to the colonization and growth of America; but rather to emphasize the contribution of those sons and daughters to the United States. Moreover, there is no intention to laud any special nationalities in respect to the achievements of any particular element or group. It must be understood that certain nations contributed the cream of their own population to the New World, while other nations

sent their worst to us. Hence in praising an element sent by a particular country of Europe at any given period of our national development, it cannot be asserted that other "nationalities" are being discriminated against. We are considering the composition not of a heterogeneous "melting pot" of nationalities, but of the American people as a body. Historical reviews should not convey the misconception that the American is merely an assembled human object. He is distinct in nationality, but not in race, from his European forebears.

## CHAPTER I

### TRADITIONAL AMERICA

The epic of colonization in North America commenced some dozen centuries after the Norse Vikings discovered the land which they called Vinland, and which is now believed to have been the bleak New England coast. It is even possible that these Nordic seafarers not only set foot on the coast of America, but that they may have founded temporary settlements there. Whatever our vague surmises in respect to these first probable discoverers of America, we may turn to the authentic accounts of the voyage of the great Genoan at the close of the fifteenth century with feelings of more assurance. Yet if the famous navigator was only emulating the achievement of the Vikings, this feat was at least an important link in the chain of Nordic accomplishments; for if he was a North Italian, he probably owed his pioneering spirit to the blood of ancestors through whose veins ran the partial strain of Goth or Lombard. But the chief significance of the voyages of Columbus, in so far as they relate to continental America, lies in the fact that these voyages electrified Europe to new deeds of enterprise, which resulted in the actual discovery and colonization of the mainland. We may conclude these brief remarks on the era of discovery by mentioning the fact that in 1606 the London Company and the Plymouth Company, under charter of King James I of England, prepared to transport colonists to the North American continent; and the following year a colony was founded at James-

town, Virginia, which almost failed, but which was saved by reinforcements from England and became the first permanent English settlement in North America. What is more, it was in this Virginia colony that the first assembly was introduced which initiated representative government in the Western Hemisphere.<sup>16</sup>

There is more than sentimental satisfaction in dreaming of three hundred years ago when another indomitable little band of men and women landed on the barren New England coast in the dead of winter. The appearance of the Pilgrim Forefathers in the New World assured to mankind everywhere the fulfilment of an idea that had been evolved by men of Nordic blood through the centuries and which was at last to be demonstrated on virgin soil as the doctrine of true democracy.

Jamestown and Plymouth mark the end of the era of discovery and launch the period of successful colonization in North America. At about the time when Captain John Smith was exploring the coast of New England, a pestilence had reduced the Indian population along the coastline; and this fact stimulated new endeavors on the part of the English to establish settlements in the New World. So it came to pass that the Pilgrims, after a temporary sojourn in Holland, crossed the sea to found the rock of American liberty.

Can we of a later age visualize the hardships of the sturdy pioneers of America, whether on the bleak shores of New England, or the less forbidding coast of Virginia? Can we hear the screech of savage Redskins bent on massacres; can we conceive of the courage, faith and industry that cleared away the dark forests, tilled a new soil, built cleanly homes of rude logs and faced death in the form of starvation and pestilence? Can we understand the courage of women who watched and prayed



THE BURNING OF JAMESTOWN, VIRGINIA, BY INDIANS IN 1622





over a wooden trundle bed, as cunning savages glided amid the forbidding primeval forest beyond? This was not the casual migration of insignificant folk to a new land. It was the very climax of determination, integrity and mettle, born in a superior folk through countless ages of peerless race life. This is clearly apparent when we consider the ridiculously small number of survivors of the little Pilgrim band and then realize the vast influence they and their descendants have wielded in the development of this country.<sup>17</sup>

The Pilgrims were the first Puritans to settle in the New World. They were followed, however, by a much greater number of Puritans of a more austere character. It is said that within fifteen years after Winthrop's fleet arrived, twenty thousand Puritans arrived in the region of Massachusettes. Salem, Charlestown, Boston and Roxbury were settled between 1628 and 1630. The bigotry of these sturdy Puritans can hardly be held against them when we consider that their idiosyncracies were merely the reflection of the period in which they lived; but on the other hand, their virtues will live forever.

From the beginning of the Puritan influx up to the period of the great revolution in England, which latter restrained religious persecution, Englishmen flocked to the Colonies and set up humble homes in a land hedged in on one side by the mighty Atlantic and upon the other by a vast wilderness.<sup>18</sup> After this revolution, emigration from England gradually diminished for a time, and a national character began to be developed as the ties with the Mother Country decreased.<sup>19</sup> It is true that during the Commonwealth some Royalists escaped to Virginia, and it is rather curious to observe that many of the sons of these were actually leaders of the American Revolution of a later date.

By the middle of the seventeenth century more than



half of the English colonists were located in New England and most of the remainder of the population in Virginia. By the last decade of the latter century, however, only a half of the some 220,000 persons in the Colonies were resident in Massachusetts and Virginia. After the middle of the century there had been comparatively few immigrants to the New England States, so that the some one hundred thousand New Englanders at the beginning of the eighteenth century were almost entirely native-born. This is in marked contrast to present-day New England, for as a result of contributing a vast proportion of its best blood in the conquest of the Western wilderness, and the replacing of much of the pioneer stock with latter-day immigrants, New England is now far less homogeneous than in those early years. Likewise the South shared in the occupation of the Western reserves, but probably to a lesser degree than New England, and moreover there has been comparatively negligible infusion of alien elements in the Southern States, so that Dixie remains practically as homogeneous today as in the chivalric days of the Cavaliers.

At the close of the seventeenth century, the English population of the mainland colonies stretched along the Atlantic coast from Pemaquid to Port Royal. New England's white folk were practically all English. In Maine the settled regions were within ten miles of the coast, but the frontier line in New Hampshire and eastern Massachusetts ran back anywhere from fifteen to fifty miles from the seaboard. All Rhode Island, except a small region in the southern part, was occupied; and in the Connecticut Valley the settlers were just beginning to enter the valleys north of Massachusetts.

But not alone in the English colonies was the English element important. Almost half of the eighteen thousand inhabitants of what is now New York were English

and they greatly predominated among the ten thousand people of East New Jersey. New England congregations filled whole towns in the New Netherland Province, and great numbers of English were resident in Manhattan. From Connecticut swarms of New Englanders had swept over Long Island, even as far as Bruekelyn (Brooklyn), which town was destined to absorb a New England character that survived for many years, the very centre of Puritan church communities. In East New Jersey the Puritans had settled in great numbers, particularly between the years 1664 and 1665. Newark was founded by Robert Treat and his early Puritan settlers in New Jersey. The region from Sandy Hook to the mouth of the Raritan had become before long a veritable New England, as the overflow from New England and Long Island poured into the Province. Even West New Jersey became predominantly English, partly due to the great number of Quakers who flocked there. Thus it seemed foreordained that revolution against Dutch rule would develop in these regions of New Netherland which had become (in marked contrast to the region of the Hudson River Valley, with its decidedly Dutch element), so English in character.

In the year 1674, New Netherlands was permanently transferred to England. The significance of this circumstance lies not so much in the actual consummation of English conquest, as in the fact that the English element now predominated in all the settlements that stretched in a practically unbroken line from Florida to Lower Canada. All other nationalities were practically to lose their identity in the vastly predominant Anglo-Saxon strain.

Undoubtedly Pennsylvania was the most cosmopolitan of all the States in the eighteenth century, but even here the English element was very numerous, if not actually

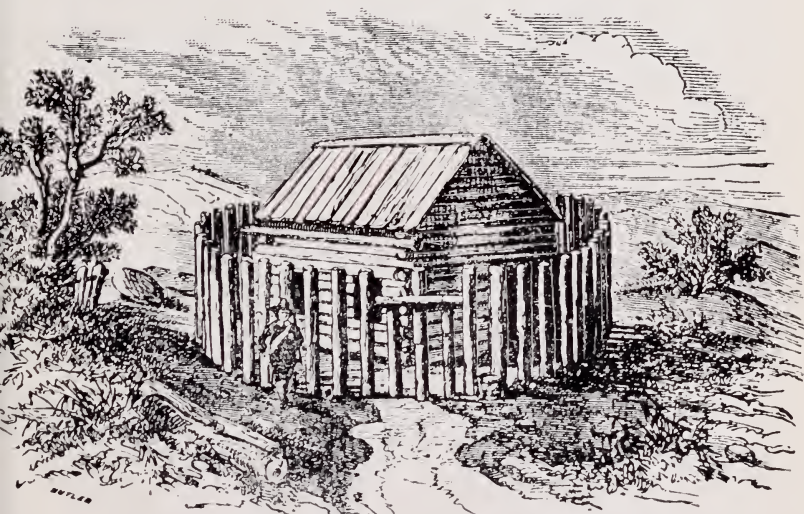
predominant. The settlements along the Delaware numbered about twenty thousand in population in 1700, about two-thirds of these being in Pennsylvania (then including Delaware). The settled region was almost ten miles back from the coast, between Barnegat and Cape May. The interior of West New Jersey was then unoccupied. Along the eastern shore of the Delaware, however, there was a populated region between twenty-five or thirty-five miles wide. In Pennsylvania and Delaware the settled area was continuous from the mouth of the Lehigh to the southern boundary of the latter. Here was the junction with the Southern Colonies.

Maryland at this time held thirty thousand people; Virginia, sixty thousand; and North Carolina, about three thousand; practically all English. Between the Albemarle and Cape Fear districts lay a wilderness of two hundred miles; but there was an inhabited strip of fifty miles above Cape Charles. An inhabited region twenty-five miles wide was to be found on the west side of Chesapeake Bay. On the right bank of the Potomac the plantations covered a strip five miles wide. From the great bend in the Potomac, the frontier ran south to Richmond; and then curved to enclose a settled region twenty-five miles wide on the south bank of the James. The frontier crossed the North Carolina boundary forty miles from the coast and ran southwestward to the Chowan River.

South Carolina was more or less associated with the West Indies in 1700. Most of the inhabitants, of whom there were over five thousand, appear to have been English from Barbados and other British islands,<sup>20</sup> but there were some from England and the New England colonies, with a sprinkling of Scotch-Irish and Huguenots. The settled area extended from the Santee to the mouth of the Edisto. The Barbadian planters were



EARLY BLOCK-HOUSE, A DEFENCE AGAINST THE  
INDIANS



THE FIRST CHURCH, WITHIN A STOCKADE, AT  
MIDDLETOWN, CONNECTICUT





located on the Cooper River, Goose Creek, Ashley River, James Island, Johns Island and Edisto Island.<sup>21</sup>

"The colonization of North America by the English was not complete with the founding of the seaboard settlements, but continued in a series of steps westward. At each step American society has returned to simple frontier conditions, under which it has been free to try out new experiments in democracy. Each stage of advance has made its special contribution to our institutions.

"In a broad way these steps in the westward movement have corresponded with the great physiographic areas. The seventeenth century had witnessed the occupation of the Tidewater region, between the coast and the Fall Line. . . .

"The first half of the eighteenth century witnessed the movement of settlement into the next great physiographic region, the Piedmont, or the area lying between the Fall Line and the Appalachian Mountains.

"This westward movement was the resultant of numerous factors. To the frontier, people were attracted by the cheap land and unlimited opportunity. . . . The less prosperous everywhere, and in the South indentured servants who had served their time, were glad to begin life anew on the frontier. Prosperous planters whose estates had been exhausted by tobacco, sought the Piedmont. . . . Speculation in frontier lands became a passion, and . . . New England deacons and Virginia aristocrats alike built hopes of fortune on tracts . . . on the border. The movement to the frontier was stimulated in some cases by intercolonial and international rivalry; thus the settlement of Georgia was . . . a defensive movement against Spain . . . The new arrivals from Europe . . . came in tens of thousands, attracted by cheap lands and opportunity, or

driven by economic, political, or religious unrest.

"Trails to the Piedmont had been opened by the fur traders . . . . by official explorers . . . . and by the Southern cattlemen who had established 'cowpens' . . . . beyond the frontiers of settlement. The Indian barrier was removed at the turn of the century by a series of frontier wars, which either evicted the natives or broke their resistance. Of these the chief examples are King Philip's War in New England, the Susquehanna War in Virginia, the Tuscarora War in North Carolina and the Yemassee War in South Carolina. The process of expansion, however, involved further struggles with the Indians, and border conflicts with French neighbors in the North and Spanish neighbors in the South.

"Under these influences the migration took place and by the middle of the century a continuous back-country settlement had been formed all the way from Maine to Georgia. . . . . The open spaces (of New England) were nearly all filled in to the northern boundary of Massachusetts, while long spurs of settlement were pushed up the rivers into Vermont, New Hampshire, and Maine, where French rivalry was encountered. In New York settlement was retarded by the practice of land leasing. . . . . Nevertheless a narrow ribbon of settlement pushed up the Mohawk from Albany nearly to Oneida Lake, while the lower Hudson River settlements widened out toward Pennsylvania and into New Jersey.

"Into the southern Piedmont the movement was a double one. Some newcomers crossed the Tidewater and pushed over the Fall Line. . . . . Thence some pushed up the Delaware into New Jersey and northwestern Pennsylvania; others west into the valleys east of the Kittatiny Range. Those who followed . . . . moved south across the Susquehanna and up the Shenandoah Valley, whence they turned eastward into the



Piedmont of Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and even Georgia.”<sup>22</sup>

Very quickly even the uninhabited strips from northern New England to the southern Carolinas were overrun by these men of English blood.

The New Englanders were Anglo-Saxon in the strictest sense of the word; that is, they were the yeomanry of England who were descendants for the most part of Angle and Saxon; for the necessity of industrious labor on the land attracted the sturdy middle class population from England in the persons of the Puritans. Not that there were not many men of high degree in the New England community, however. Yet the democratic influence of the Northern Colony brought great numbers of men of comparatively lowly origin to actual prominence in the community.

On the other hand, the Norman aristocratic strain was far more prevalent probably among the Cavaliers of Virginia and other parts of the South than among the Puritans. The wealthy Southern colonists were of the bluest blood, and their refinement and elegance were augmented by the introduction of the slave system, which was a cause as well as effect of the patrician mode of life of the wealthy planters of the aristocracy and nobility.

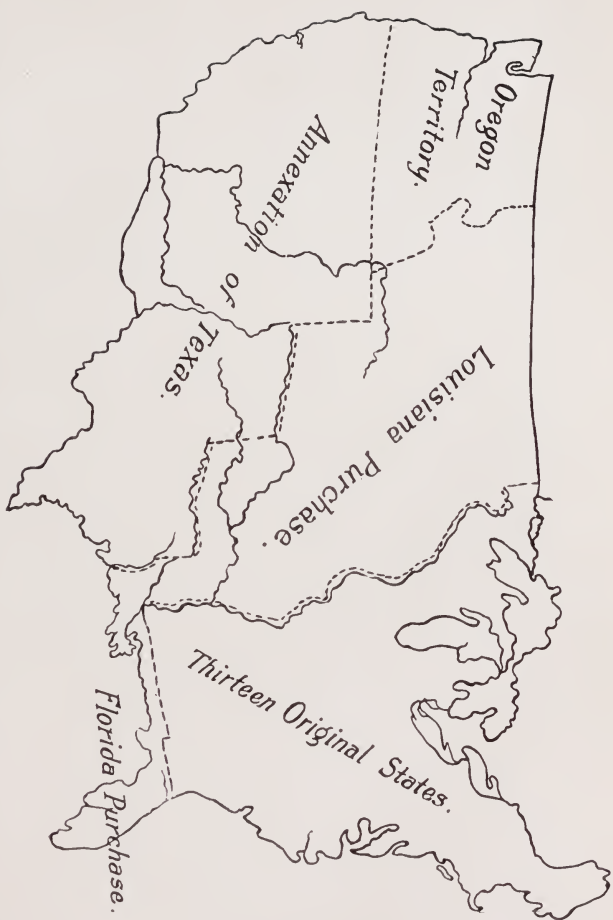
Yet there is a very significant likeness, after all, between the Puritans and Cavaliers, which is that both were strictly observant of their religious duties, whether dissenter or Church of England. The Pilgrims and Puritans contributed mostly to our political ideals, the Anglicans of Virginia and the South first gave us representative government; but the Quakers, the Catholics of Maryland and the dissenters generally had a share in furthering the spirit of civil and religious liberty in America.

By the year 1790 (when the first official Census of the

country was tabulated), the population of the Colonies had not advanced much beyond the Allegheny Mountains. By far the greatest proportion of the people were of English ancestry; for, besides being the first settlers, the latter had vastly increased in numbers through a remarkable birth rate and constant accessions of new settlers from time to time. However, there were important contributions to the fast-growing community, particularly during the eighteenth century, from every nation of Northwest Europe.

The Dutch had become established near the mouth of the Hudson as early as 1623, when the Dutch West India Company settled thirty families of Walloon Huguenots<sup>23</sup> on the site of New York and up the river at Fort Orange. It was these Walloons of Orania, or Fort Orange (now Albany) in the Iroquois region, who first discovered the value of wampum in trading with the Indians. This first contingent was followed by a steady flow of Dutch settlers. In addition, Manhattan under the Dutch had become, even as it is today, a refuge for all nations. English, Huguenots, Germans, Irish, Swiss, the pious Waldenses, settlers from the Belgic provinces, and a scattering from even such remote regions as the Piedmont and Italian Alps, as well as a few Jews, all found refuge in New Amsterdam. Nevertheless it cannot be said that the Dutch colony was always tolerant of the miscellaneous sects within its gates. In fact Dutch Lutherans fled from the intolerance of New Amsterdam as early as 1674, settling in the Carolinas. Moreover, it is a singular fact that the Dutch settlers of New Netherlands were rather well satisfied when their colony passed under English rule, for they knew that to the security of their property was to be added the boon of English religious and political liberty.

This same feeling was true of the Dutch and Swedes



ORIGINAL AMERICAN TERRITORY OCCUPIED BY NORDIC COLONISTS,  
AND THE REGIONS INTO WHICH THEY EXPANDED



on the Delaware, who shortly afterward had also come under English rule. Under the British, the settlements of New Netherlands beyond the Delaware—consisting chiefly of groups of Dutch about Lewistown and Newcastle and Swedes and a few Swedish-Finns at Christiana Creek, at Chester and near Philadelphia—were retained as dependencies of New York; while the land of New Netherlands between the Hudson and the Delaware became New Jersey. Later on, scattered numbers of Dutch continued to settle Pennsylvania and East and West New Jersey.

Previous to the English accession, the Swedes, who had settled on the Delaware, were in constant friction with the Dutch of New Amsterdam; for the latter, in addition to their claims to Manhattan Island and the beautiful Catskill region, were aggressive claimants of the land about the Delaware. Unfortunately for the Swedes, their small colony was weak for lack of colonists. It is true that they had settled Tinicum, below Philadelphia, as early as 1646, as well as the towns of Wicaco, Moyamensing, Kensington, Passyunk, on the west bank of the Schuylkill, and Christiania, which latter was to become the important city of Wilmington; but nevertheless, in 1653, there were only two hundred people in the colony on the Delaware, and the three hundred and fifty additional folk, who were sent over the following year by the Swedish crown, to help New Sweden, found the forts surrendered to the Dutch. This situation did not entirely prevent Swedish arrivals, however, and Pennsylvania and West New Jersey received Swedish settlers thereafter. Newcastle, Upland and other settlements of Swedes and Dutch were existent when William Penn arrived.

The Huguenots in the Colonies were relatively few in numbers, but they were of the finest and most capable

element of France, and thus wielded a considerable influence in America. Being Calvinists, the Huguenots generally united with other Protestant denominations, although it is true that to this day an occasional Huguenot church may be discovered which was founded in the Colonial period. But the Huguenots merged very readily into the Anglo-Saxon population, not only because of their being scattered in all parts of the Colonies (often as individuals), or because of their religion, but because "after all, the Huguenot was not really Latin, but of the Norse blood of Rolf the Granger and his Vikings."<sup>24</sup>

Yet doubtless the dispersion of the Huguenots did somewhat aid in their assimilation. The extent to which these heroic people were scattered may be judged by contemplating their more important settlements. For instance Jean Ribaut planted his colony of Huguenots at Port Royal as early as 1562. Thereafter, French Protestants came from Languedoc, Rochelle, Saintonge, Bordeaux, the provinces on the Bay of Biscay, St. Quentin, Poitiers, the beautiful valley of Tours, St. Lo and Dieppe, to find homes in America. Some came to Charleston; others to the banks of the Cooper. Four or five hundred settled the banks of the Santee. Some came to what is now New York State, particularly to New Amsterdam and the hamlets of Staten Island. In 1677 New Paltz was founded by Huguenots who had settled among the Dutch; and New Rochelle was bought and settled by later Huguenots who came after the Edict of Nantes had been revoked in 1685. In New England, too, there were a few of these French Protestants; in fact those of the some six thousand Acadians who were banished from Nova Scotia, that did not go to the vicinity of New Orleans, were taken to New England, where they settled permanently; and it must be remembered that there were many Protestants as well as Catholics among



the latter. Like the Huguenots, the Celtic Irish settled in the Colonies as individuals or families, rather than in notable communities. As early as 1650 five or six hundred Irish were forcibly driven out of Ireland by Cromwell, the forerunner of the scattered Irish Catholic immigrants of the ensuing years.<sup>25</sup>

The remarkable increase in the proportion of the Middle Colonies during the latter half of the seventeenth century was due, as we have shown, to immigration as well as settlement. To New York and Pennsylvania, particularly the latter, there were coming many new arrivals from Germany, Holland, Sweden, the North of Ireland, France and, though to a less noticeable degree, from several other countries. In Pennsylvania were to be found English, including at first Quakers, Dutch, Swedes and Welsh, but the advertising methods of William Penn throughout Northwest Europe, and his liberal views, brought English Quakers, German Mennonites, Scotch-Irish Presbyterians and French Huguenots. The beginning of the eighteenth century brought more Scotch-Irish and German Palatines, in stronger numbers than other immigrants; in fact the former contributed a greater proportion of newcomers than any other nationality during the entire century.

In these early days the Germans, who were settled in the eastern part of Pennsylvania, were on good terms with the English Quakers, but quarrelled often with the Scotch-Irish of the Western frontier backwoods. Nor would the peace-loving Quakers (who contrary to general belief, moved their religious communities afar) give military help to the frontiersmen, either Scotch-Irish or English, in their difficulties with the Indians.

In Pennsylvania, too, were settled the most important community of Welsh in the Colonies. For the Cymry, like the Huguenots, were far from numerous and were



moreover scattered through various communities, so that they lost their identity to a great extent. But those that settled in the vicinity of Philadelphia bequeathed the curious Welsh names of the uplands. The "Welsh Barony" of forty thousand acres immediately west of Philadelphia became the modern suburbs of quaint beauty, known as Merion (Merioneth Town), Radnor, Haverford, Bryn Mawr, Bala, Ardmore, Wynnewood, Narberth, Cymwyd, Pencoyd, etc. Indeed it is not unusual to meet persons of the present day in this region in whose names are interspersed the consonants w and r or the vowel y that are distinctive in surnames of Welsh origin. From Pennsylvania part of the Welsh community drifted into New Jersey, or Virginia, and other Southern States.

The Scotch-Irish were an undeniably important element in the American Colonies during the eighteenth century, most of them being concentrated in Pennsylvania. Some few Scotch-Irish had arrived in the Colonies in the latter part of the seventeenth century and early in the eighteenth, but it was not until the middle of the latter that the Scotch-Irish communities in the back country between New England and the South became quite numerous. There were two principal streams of Scotch-Irish, the larger passing through the port of Philadelphia and the smaller through Charleston. In lesser numbers they also entered the country at Lewes, Newcastle (Delaware) and even as far north as Boston.

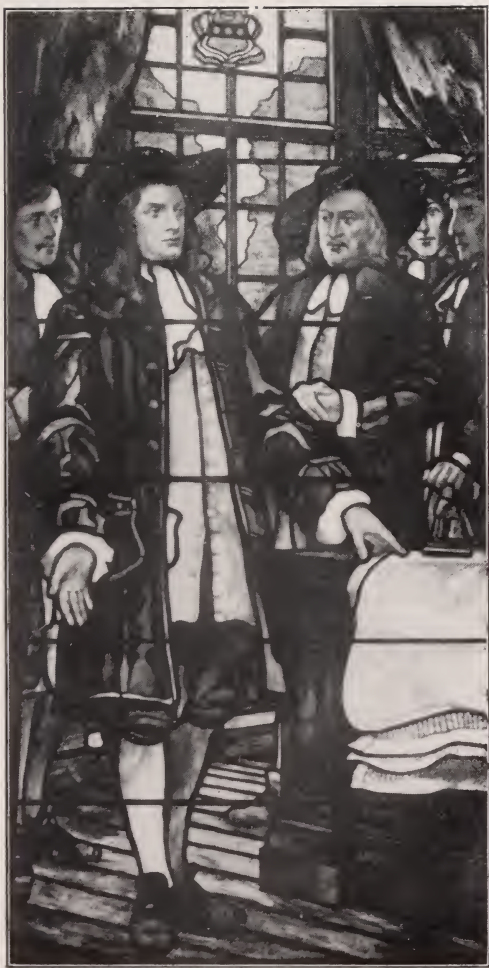
Before 1669 a small number of Scotch-Irish had settled the eastern shore of Chesapeake Bay. Thereafter a slight stream came to each of the colonies. Even in New England there was a considerable number of arrivals between 1714 and 1720, over 500 arriving in the summer of 1718. Most of these were sent to the frontier. Worcester, whose population doubled to the number of

400 by Scotch-Irish arrivals, became the center of distribution. In succession, from 1731 to 1741, the towns of Pelham, Colerain, Warren and Blandford were quickened in growth by Scotch-Irish settlers. Then, from western Massachusetts, some Scotch-Irish moved northward along the Connecticut valley, and formed small settlements in Windsor, Orange and Caledonia counties in Vermont and Grafton County in New Hampshire. Other groups of Scotch-Irish are known to have landed in Maine. Thirty families landed at Falmouth, on Casco Bay, a few settled at the mouth of the Kennebec River, and by 1720 there were several hundreds on the Kennebec and the Androscoggin, part of whom removed later to New Hampshire and even Pennsylvania, in order to avoid difficulties with the Indians. The modern towns of Belfast, Maine and Londonderry, New Hampshire, suggest the early Scotch-Irish influence. In 1719 Nutfield (later Londonderry) became a centre from which the communities of Rockingham, Hillsboro and Merrimack counties originated. Even Vermont received a small Scotch-Irish migration which, joined to that radiating from Worcester, drifted northwestward. There were later Scotch-Irish communities in Maine, and in 1729 a hundred and fifty families migrated to New England from Nova Scotia, most of them settling at Pemaquid and the rest being induced by Samuel Waldo to settle at Warren on the St. George. To a lesser extent than to the Northern frontier, a sprinkling of Scotch-Irish entered Connecticut and Rhode Island. About 1718 some Scotch-Irish settled Orange and Ulster counties in New York, and in 1738 Scotch-Irish settlers came from Londonderry, New Hampshire, as well as from the North of Ireland to settle what is now Otsego County. Also a few more had settled in certain valleys of the Berkshires.

Because of the scattered location of many of the Scotch-Irish settlements, as indicated above, it was inevitable that a certain number of this sturdy element should eventually lose their identity in the mass of the Colonial population. Their individual customs and peculiarities disappeared to a great extent, even as the Huguenots, Scotch, Dutch and Swedes lost their individuality in the years to come through gradual assimilation with the English strain.

In Pennsylvania, however, a different situation prevailed, for the Scotch-Irish were about equal in numbers to the German settlers known as the "Pennsylvania Dutch," and almost equal to the combined number of Quakers and others of English or New England origin. Moreover these Scotch-Irish congregated in great numbers upon the frontier, where their Presbyterian faith and stable institutions persist among their descendants of the Piedmont region, and beyond, up to the present day. In the main, however, even in Pennsylvania, the Scotch-Irish have been moulded with the English stock and to a lesser degree with the German stock into a more or less homogeneous mass.

The earliest Scotch-Irish settlers in the Middle Colonies appear to have arrived before 1708. By the year 1720 they were following the banks of the Delaware River, entering Bucks County and thence drifting into Northampton County. Another stream of them commenced to flow along the wooded Susquehanna Valley, settling the creek bottoms on the east side of the river, chiefly in Chester, Lancaster and Dauphin counties in Pennsylvania and Cecil County in Maryland. From that time up to 1730 the Scotch-Irish Presbyterians were entering Cumberland County in Pennsylvania, which brought them to the threshold of the interior valleys. They also entered Franklin, Adams and York counties,



PENN GIVING THE CONSTITUTION TO  
PENNSYLVANIA



whence they were attracted southward between the great slopes of the foothills. By 1735 these men of Ulster origin began to enter the beautiful Shenandoah Valley. Some settled in Maryland and the easternmost counties of what is now West Virginia, but the majority took up lands west of the Blue Ridge Mountains of Virginia, or traversed the passes into the Piedmont east of the Blue Ridge. In the twenty years after 1740 scattered settlements were made along the frontier from Virginia as far as Florida, although the absence of exact data leads to the belief that these latter communities were relatively very small. In North Carolina the lands between the Yadkin and Catawba Rivers were somewhat settled by Scotch-Irish; while in 1750 the overflow entered the western part of South Carolina and even, a few years later, the upland country of Georgia. From their strategic position in the backwoods, these Scotch-Irish became a large element among the first pioneers who spread beyond the Alleghanies into Ohio. The truth of this statement is shown by the fact that even to this day the Presbyterians of those counties of Pennsylvania west of the Alleghanies display the uncompromising traits, the moral quality and the religious steadfastness of their Irish forbears of Lowland Scotch and English connection, who with indomitable energy and perseverance settled the Western frontier of Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia and North Carolina, and thence joined the great migration into Ohio.

It has been said that the Scotch-Irish typified the American of today, in that he was a mixture of several nationalities. Perhaps in those days, as in the later years, he was regarded as a medium of accord between jarring factors, combining as he did the blood of Scotchman, Englishman and Irishman. Or it might have been a natural Celtic propensity for politics that brought the



Scotch-Irish to prominence in government. But at any rate it is a significant fact that Ohio, from its central position in the Union, later furnished a great number of presidents of the United States, and that the number of our presidents of Scotch-Irish extraction is far out of proportion to the number of that element in our population.

Although the greater part of the Scotch element in America was composed of the Ulster Scots, the Scotch from the Lowlands, and to a lesser extent from the Highlands of Scotland, had some share in the life of our Colonial population.<sup>26</sup> But the settlers from Scotland never left their imprint upon the community as did the Scotch-Irish of the frontier; owing to the fact that the former were scattered in small communities throughout the country, which quickly assimilated with the English or other inhabitants, among whom they settled.

Some idea of the wide dispersion of these natives of Scotland, accounting more or less for their relatively small historical importance, may be gathered from a survey of the settlements scattered in New England, New York, the Carolinas, Maryland and the Mohawk Valley. The various small companies of Scotch that founded homes in these far-flung regions may be briefly mentioned as follows: The first few Scots (Highlanders) arrived in New York, having drifted northward after the failure of the ill-fated expedition to found a great and strategic Scotch Empire across the jungles of the Isthmus of Darien. The first really large body of Scotch, 500 in number, settled the site of Argyle, Washington County, New York, in the vicinity of Lake George. As early as 1652 Oliver Cromwell is known to have sent about two hundred and fifty Scotch prisoners to New England. By the year 1669 Scotch were settled on the eastern shores of Chesapeake Bay. Before 1680 some Scotch had



settled near the site of Norfolk, Virginia, and in that very year a small number were settled in Nepmung County, Massachusetts, far to the northward. From 1683 to 1685 a considerable number of Scotch dissenters sought refuge in East New Jersey, among the English and Dutch who had preceded them—the inception of a movement that was to make New Jersey, with its Scotch and Scotch-Irish settlers, a Presbyterian stronghold. In the year 1683 also, Scots landed at Port Royal and Charleston in the Carolinas, while others founded Stuartstown. In 1717 some Scottish Jacobites were shipped to Maryland and sold as servants. Three years later, in New York, the towns of Goshen and Albany, the counties of Otsego and Saratoga, and New York City itself, are known to have had Scotch settlers. In 1738 Otsego County was again visited by other Scotchmen, who settled in Cherry Valley. Three years previous to that year, twenty-seven Scotch families had landed at Georges' River, Maine; others had settled Wyndham County, Connecticut and Perth Amboy and Freehold, New Jersey; and still others had in the same year visited Port Royal, South Carolina.

In the year 1729 Highland Scots had settled on the Cape Fear River, North Carolina; and Goose Creek (now Fayetteville) became the center of the Highland settlements. Four years later other Highlanders settled at Darien, on the Altamaha. In 1735 one hundred and thirty Highlanders settled on the banks of the Savannah River. Other Clansmen, five years later, settled the site of Washington County, New York. Still later, in 1772, the emigration of many Macdonalds from the Scotch Highlands to Cumberland County took place. During the American Revolution, some years later, the Cape Fear Highlanders and their Highland kin of the Mohawk Valley (unlike the Scotch-Irish of the frontier dis-

tricts and the majority of the other Scotch communities) were in great part numbered among the Royalists; and afterwards thousands from New York and other provinces fled to Canada, or were sent to Halifax as prisoners;<sup>27</sup> later joining the Canadian Highland communities (the latter composed partly of descendants of soldiers of Highland regiments disbanded after the French and Indian Wars.) As we have seen, the influence of these Scots was relatively obscure in the American Colonies; yet nevertheless they did contribute somewhat to the life of the American people. Thus as late as the reconstruction period after the Civil War, we find the powerful Ku Klux Klan, a society established to counteract Negro influence, emulating the ancient Scottish loyalty to clans and secret orders.

Almost coincidently with the Scotch-Irish immigration of the eighteenth century, and quite as important in numbers, the Germans began to arrive in a considerable stream, settling for the most part in Pennsylvania. The majority came from the Palatinate, Wurtemberg, Baden and Switzerland. Most of these people were later to be known as the "Pennsylvania Dutch". They were generally of moderate circumstances, although there were some relatively well-to-do, while others came as indentured servants. Those less favored in means naturally gravitated to the lands of the unsettled interior.

The first German settlement was founded as the direct result of William Penn's visit to the Rhineland in 1677. A group of Pietists purchased lands in Pennsylvania, and the community of Germantown came into existence. Year by year new settlers from the German states arrived. Six years after the first settlement of Germantown the Mennonites also settled in that community. In the next year Labadists settled on the Bohemian River, in what is now Delaware.

In 1694 a small body of Rosicrusians settled on the banks of the Wissahickon.

The real tide of German migration did not start, however, until 1709, the year in which a part of the Palatinate and Wurtemberg was devastated. A hard winter, political oppression and religious persecution in Germany had intensified the troubles of these people. A year earlier, however, some Palatinates had founded Newburgh, New York; while about six hundred and fifty went to Newbern, near the mouth of the Neuse River, in North Carolina. In 1710 some twenty-two hundred Palatines, after hardships and deaths on the crossing, arrived at what is now Governor's Island, New York City, to be distributed among the settlements of New York Province. Four hundred and twenty-four of them were left in New York City and the rest left for Livingston Manor, Hunterstown, Queensburg, Armsburg, Haysburg, Elizabethtown, Georgetown and New Village. Many of them, instead of being sent to lands on the Schoharie, a branch of the Mohawk (where, it is said, they were promised lands by Mohawk chieftians), were placed on lands along both sides of the Hudson near Saugerties, where an attempt to produce tar and pitch ended in failure. The colony on the west bank of the river was called West Camp and numbered about six hundred people; while the East Camp, on the other bank (located on the manor of Robert Livingston) contained nearly twice as many. In 1712 and 1713 many persons from the East Camp removed to the Schoharie, but land disputes compelled even some of these to move again to the Mohawk Valley between Fort Hunter and Frankfort, while still others even decided to migrate as far as Berks County, Pennsylvania in 1723 and 1727. Meanwhile most of the original settlers of Newberg in 1708 had departed in 1719 for Schoharie County to the north, or had

wandered to the Pennsylvania valleys. In the following years German colonists settled portions of Dutchess, Ulster, Columbia, Greene and Schoharie counties, along the Mohawk River, and to some extent the counties of Montgomery, Fulton, Herkimer, Oneida, Saratoga and Schenectady.

But while these lesser German migrations were taking place in other regions, the main body of Germans was entering Pennsylvania through the port of Philadelphia. The harsh treatment of Germans in New York and the kindly reception by the Quakers had its effect, and the years between 1710 and 1727 brought from fifteen to twenty thousand Germans, who settled in Lancaster, Berks and Montgomery counties. Between 1727 and 1740 fifty-seven thousand more came over, and between 1741 and 1756 about twenty thousand.<sup>28</sup> The more well-to-do of these newcomers stayed in Philadelphia, but the great majority pushed on northward and westward to Lehigh, Northampton, Munroe, Lebanon and Dauphin counties; then they crossed the Shenandoah and settled York, Cumberland and Adams, as well as Chester County. Then these German settlers turned southward through Maryland into Virginia and ascended the Shenandoah Valley. Others entered the fertile Susquehanna and Lehigh Valleys. In fact the now thickly settled German districts in Pennsylvania became more or less the distributing centre from which radiated smaller and sometimes scattered German communities in other provinces.

In New Jersey Germans of the Reformed Church are known to have first settled German Valley (Morris County) in 1707, later spreading in company with Lutheran newcomers to Somerset, Bergen, Essex, Hunterdon, Warren, Sussex, Morris, Passaic and Salem counties. In Maryland Germans helped to found Baltimore and

Frederick; Washington and Carroll counties included a considerable number of Germans, most of whom were Protestants. Many Germans, who had settled Conocheague, Hagerstown and that portion of the Shenandoah Valley sloping to the north, later trekked into the fertile valleys of the Yadkin and the Catawba. The first of the Germans in the southern Shenandoah came from Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, and settled in 1727 near Elkton. Others from York later settled on the site of Winchester, and in 1734 Harper's Ferry was founded. German colonists also spread to Clarke, Frederick, Warren, Shenandoah, Page and Rockingham counties in Virginia, Jefferson and Morgan counties in what is now West Virginia, along Patterson Creek and the south branch of the Potomac, and somewhat along the New River portion of the Great Kanawha.

There was a considerable number of German and Swiss colonists in the Carolinas. In North Carolina the Palatines, as we have already noted, and the Swiss had settled near the confluence of the Neuse and the Trent as early as 1710. The settlement was later destroyed when the Tuscaroras went on the warpath, but when the latter removed northward to become incorporated with the Iroquois these Germans occupied the lands formerly held by the Indians and spread over much of what is now Craven County. The vicinity of New Berne was settled by 1714, as previously stated.

While the Germans from Pennsylvania were beginning to take up lands along the Yadkin in 1745, it was not until five years later that the arrivals became numerous. Eventually German settlements appeared in Stokes, Forsyth, Guilford, Davidson, Rowan and Cabarrus counties. In South Carolina the first German arrivals settled in or near Charleston. In 1732 a settlement was made in Beaufort County, and in the same



year the Swiss established Purrysburgh, and a large number of Swiss began to migrate to America. It has been said that as many as twenty-five thousand Swiss emigrated to Pennsylvania and the Carolinas during the eighteenth century. German villages spread along the banks of the Edisto and Congaree Rivers, in Orangeburg and Lexington counties, and toward the boundary of Georgia. Most of the South Carolina Germans were Badeners, Wurtembergers, Swiss and certain discontents from Maine.

In Georgia the first Germans were Salzburgers, who arrived at Savannah in 1734 and moved to the site of Ebenezer, which town was founded by them. Settlers from Ebenezer then removed to a point some eight miles down the river, opposite Purrysburgh, and they called this community New Ebenezer. In 1731 certain Swiss had established themselves on the left bank of the Savannah, as we have already indicated. In 1733 the immigrants to Georgia included German Moravians, who proved to be settlers quite as worthy as those industrious Germans of the Mohawk Valley.

Lastly it may be stated, in respect to the German community, that even New England and Nova Scotia received a small number of newcomers of this nationality. Some in 1740 settled the town of Waldoborough on Broad Bay, in Maine. In 1751 Frankfort (subsequently called Dresden) was founded on the Kennebec River. Between 1750 and 1753 some fifteen hundred Germans entered New England, many of whom we have already referred to as having removed to South Carolina. One group settled at Braintree in 1760, but all of these later moved to the German communities in that part of what was then the Province of Massachusetts, which was later to be known as the counties of Lincoln, Knox and Waldo in the State of Maine.<sup>29</sup> The movement of Ger-



mans to Lunenburg County, Nova Scotia, was checked by the English government in 1753, and the stream was thereafter diverted to Broad Bay and the Kennebec. And finally, after the Revolutionary War, many of the Hessian mercenaries settled in America.<sup>30</sup>

It must be noted that the Germans (unlike the Huguenots, Irish, Welsh, and others who soon assimilated themselves in scattered communities) were prone to congregate in lingual communities. Where these communities were large enough they retained their individual tongue and character even though surrounded by English-speaking people. Thus the bi-lingual community in the beautiful Lancaster valleys and hills stubbornly hold to their olden customs and quaint dialect and are known, to this very day, as the "Pennsylvania Dutch." Yet ever since the early German missionaries exerted their marked influence over the uncouth backwoodsmen beyond the German settlements in Colonial days, these simple, sturdy, industrious folk have contributed their traits to the American stock of today.

The Jews of the Colonial period were of the very finest type from Western Europe. The first shipload of Jews came to the Dutch possession of Manhattan from Brazil. They were Portuguese Jews who had migrated to the Portuguese Colony in South America. Upon arriving in Manhattan, they were granted citizenship by the Dutch government and were actually permitted to build a synagogue. From this very congregation afterwards came many well-known patriots of the Revolution. Descendants of the early Jewish settlers on Manhattan Island still worship there at the present day in the Spanish and Portuguese synagogue. In 1658 fifteen Jewish families from Holland settled at Newport, Rhode Island; and Roger Williams' tolerant colony for a while harbored the greater number of Jews outside of New

York. These first Jews in Rhode Island are credited with having introduced the Masonic Order into America. By the period of the Revolutionary War there were several thousand Jews in the Colonies, mostly in New York, New England or the Carolinas, which offered the surest haven for those fleeing from religious persecution. Even in Colonial times the Jews were congregated in the large cities; yet it is a droll fact that in the year 1790 New York City contained a Jewish population of but three hundred and eighty-five persons, in marked contrast to the million and a half that inhabit the "greatest Jewish city in the world" at the present day!

Another noteworthy migration that must be mentioned here is that of many New England Yankees to the Wyoming Valley and other parts in the vicinity. Even earlier the Puritans had sought better climes than their bleak New England surroundings and had ventured south in scattered numbers. One particular group settled Cape Fear, but not for long, because of the bleak and forbidding aspect of that region. In fact when they sailed away these Puritans left a written message affixed to a post which contained caustic comments expressing their disgust; the message being found by immigrants from Barbados who arrived there a few years later. But the town of Dorchester that still exists in South Carolina was named and settled by folk who migrated late in the seventeenth century from the Dorchester of Massachusetts. Another company formed a settlement twenty miles back of the present site of Charleston, South Carolina. But to return to the greater migration remarked above, the attention of the Connecticut Yankees was attracted by a valley of superlative beauty. They secured it under their own jurisdiction and sent out companies known as the "Wyoming Settlers". In 1753 Connecticut people formed the Susquehanna Com-



THE WYOMING MASSACRE



pany, and the following year these New Englanders purchased the land now known as Luzerne, Wyoming, Susquehanna and Wayne counties, Pennsylvania. These white cabin-dwellers on the banks of the Susquehanna were enamoured, quite as much as the aborigines who guided their canoes on the stream, by the charms of the deep, broad river that majestically descended through magnificent highlands and mountains from wooded lakes in the north, a fit and romantic highway for vigorous pioneers from rugged New England and other northern regions.

It is a particularly noteworthy fact that the Colonial inhabitants of the Carolinas were, many of them, men who had come thither from other Colonies, or the Old World, in order to avoid persecution or restraint. Two-thirds of the population of the Carolinas were dissenters from the Church of England. There were many Quakers and, as we previously observed, some New England Puritans, Huguenots and Scotch Presbyterians, besides the mass of the original Cavalier and indentured population. Their new-found freedom made these Carolinians, in general, a care-free and indomitable people, who did not hesitate to defy taxation and in many cases made friends with buccaneers of the Spanish Main or seized Indian captives for the West Indian slave trade. The earlier Carolinians built no towns, lived along valley and stream in scattered communities, and traveled by rowboats or along blazed woodland trails. It was this care-free existence that prevented the formation of plantation communities in the Carolinas such as were to be found in Virginia, that is, in the earlier days. But with the first importation of Negroes in 1671, a change was brought about in this condition. The institution of slavery received its greatest impetus through the Barbadian planters, who brought with them the aristocratic view-

point of the West Indian English.<sup>31</sup> Largely through this latter class Charleston soon became a community of the wealthy, who paid occasional visits to the plantations up the river, but concentrated in the town. In fact for a time a large part of the entire white population of South Carolina appears to have dwelt in Charleston; and thus there developed a provincial, care-free social atmosphere that reflected the character of these Colonials.

Indeed it is not too much to say that the impetuous, marauding proclivities of these Carolina pioneers, whether aristocratic Churchmen or practical Dissenters, may have directly contributed to the eventual occupation of the North American continent by Anglo-Saxon peoples. For in 1705, we are told, a freebooting expedition of fifty Carolinians and a thousand Seminole Indians destroyed and plundered the Indian villages about Appalachee Bay, at that time dominated by the Spaniards. In the country between the small Spanish settlement on the coast and the French settlements about the Mississippi, the Spanish priests exerted an influence among the natives far out of proportion to their small numbers. The Carolinians, having conquered this country, gave it over to their allies, the Seminoles, whose descendants, over a century and a quarter later, were removed to a reservation beyond the Mississippi. But most important of all, the soil of Georgia now came under English rule. To this day we may view the ruins of churches in all that region which mark the sites of Spanish and French missions that might have spread the Latin influence to at least a great part of the territory of what is now the United States.

To the casual observer it may at first appear that the somewhat detailed descriptions of certain minor movements of migration and settlement are not relatively im-



portant as regards their bearing upon present-day America with its more than a hundred million citizens. Measured in comparison to present-day immigration, which in two years can land a peaceful army, as large as the American Expeditionary Force which went to France, on our shores, it is true that the early contributions to America's population often seem almost unworthy of notice. But to the person acquainted with the phenomena of population growth in America, who knows that the rate of increase of the people during the early history of America was monumental and that the little towns of that day became the great cities of the later centuries, these small movements of population are fraught with tremendous significance. When we consider that the fifty-one survivors of the Mayflower community must have increased to the neighborhood of eighty-five thousand in three centuries, we begin to perceive that the settlement and migration of Colonial days is most significant with respect to the human geography of present-day America. The descendants of the first thousands became the millions of the "old stock" of to-day. The embryo communities developed into the very national life of America. Many of the descendants of little country hamlets or rural bodies have lived during the generations on the identical land of their forefathers, contributing in greatest measure to the development of the village into the town or great city. Or, it is true, more ambitious descendants have roamed afar, but only to found new and even greater communities drawn on the lines of their old Colonial settlements, which carry on the civilization of pioneer forefathers. The study of genealogy itself, when approached in a reverent spirit far removed from that of superciliousness, is not beneath a true American. It is all very well to look to the destiny of the future rather than to dream of the glories

of the past; still, without being reactionary, we cannot but appreciate the fact that our destiny was partly decided by those humble pioneer ancestors who dared all things for their community and for the generations that were to follow them.

Even at the time of the Revolution the country had not entirely absorbed its diverse elements. To a great extent religious beliefs moulded sentiment within each of the Colonies, whether settled by Puritan, Anglican, Quaker, Dutch Calvinist, Lutheran or Scotch-Irish Presbyterian.<sup>32</sup> Yet in spite of a few small jealousies and differences, there was a surprising amount of mutual respect and sympathy between one and all. Even the Huguenots and Scotch-Irish, of more recent immigration than the bulk of the others, were not slow in being assimilated into the general population owing to their somewhat kindred religious beliefs and by no means inferior moral quality; and Lord Baltimore's mixed group of Roman Catholics and Protestants in Maryland dwelt in common accord with one another.<sup>33</sup>

What was the character of these early Americans, whose descendants were some day to take their place among the great nations of the earth? Our ancestors were not entirely individualistic, nor did they fail to hope that at a future day their descendants would share the benefit of belonging to a gigantic nation stretching across the continent to the Pacific Ocean. From the tenets of their religious freedom sprang the heritage of political liberty. The Calvinists, whether English, Dutch or Huguenot, very materially influenced the tenets that were guiding the nation to its destiny; but the Anglicans and Catholics and others were not far behind in their spirit of religious freedom. It is a most difficult task to judge the values of the principal Colonial migrations, and most authorities differ on this question.<sup>34</sup>

In reviewing the growth of the Colonial population, it is necessary to observe the most significant fact that in 1790, the year of the first official Census of the United States, the population of the Colonies had not yet advanced very far beyond the Alleghanies. Hence it is possible to estimate approximately the growth of the so-called "old stock"—that is, the descendants of the inhabitants of the original Colonies. The special report on "A Century of Population Growth from the First to the Twelfth Census of the United States, 1790 to 1900", a lengthy volume issued by the Census Bureau in the year 1909, offers a wealth of detailed and valuable information, from which summary the following points have been selected as having an important bearing upon this survey. Of course in estimating the numerical strength of the elements that make up the population of the "old stock", the figures do not represent alone persons of pure lineage or origin. We can merely aim to arrive at the proportion of each and every element, making a fair division of persons of mixed blood.<sup>35</sup>

In the first two centuries, says the Report, the Colonies grew from a population of barely two hundred souls to a community of 3,900,000 in 1790.<sup>36</sup> There is no parallel in history for the population achievement during that period and the period that followed. The average size of families was about six persons.

From several lines of argument the conclusion was reached in the report that the 3,172,444 white inhabitants of the United States enumerated at the First Census must have increased to approximately 35,000,000 in 1900.<sup>37</sup>

Now we may supplement this Report of the year 1900 with Census and immigration and emigration figures made public during the next two decades, from which we arrive at the conclusion that our Colonial white stock numbered approximately 44,689,278 at the time of the 1920 Census.<sup>38</sup>

But the official Report also tells us that the greater part of the inhabitants of the United States at the period of the First Census were of British stock. The proportion of each nationality in the white population of the nation for the year 1790 was determined by the Census Bureau by means of a study of the surnames of families enumerated in that Census.<sup>39</sup> By applying these percentages to the 44,689,278 descendants in 1920 of the old Colonial white stock, we may determine the approximate proportion of the blood of each of these nationalities among the modern representatives of the "old stock," as follows:

	Census 1790	Per Cent		Descen- dants 1920 (Estimated on basis of 1790 per- centages)
English.....	2,605,699	{ 81.7 0.4	[Estimated from State figures given in the Report.] [41]	36,511,140 178,757
Welsh.....				
Scotch (mostly Scotch-Irish)	221,562	7.0	[Estimated from State figures given in the Report.]	3,128,249
Irish (mostly Protestant)...	61,534 [40]	1.9		849,096
German (mostly Protestant)	176,407	5.6		2,502,600
Dutch.....	78,959	2.5		1,117,232
French (mostly Huguenot)	17,619	0.6		268,136
Swedish, etc.....		0.26	[Estimated from State figures given in the Report.] [42]	116,192
Jewish.....	10,664	0.04		17,876
Others.....		.....		.....
Totals.....	3,172,444	100.		44,689,278

## THE ANNEXED WHITE STOCK

We may now very properly consider certain elements which were not included in the foregoing discussion relating to the population of the organized region of the English Colonies on the mainland in 1790. I am alluding to the early Spanish population which was joined to the United States through the accession of Florida and other territory in 1819, Texas in 1845 and the region acquired through the Mexican Cession in 1848; the French creole, Acadian, Spanish creole and even German additions through the Louisiana purchase in 1803; and the sparsely settled area of the unorganized Territory Northwest of the Ohio and parts of Vermont, with its mixed scattering of French voyageurs and English backwoodsmen. For while these various strains are not included within the "old stock" as enumerated in 1790, they are nevertheless of quite as ancient lineage as the English Colonials as far as their sojourn in North America is concerned, and as a matter of fact certain of these communities actually antedate the English settlements on the Atlantic seaboard.

The Spanish missions, supported by the treasury of the King of Spain, had entered Florida, New Mexico and Texas during the latter half of the sixteenth century, the seventeenth century and the eighteenth.<sup>43</sup> The work was conducted by Jesuit, Franciscan and Dominican missionaries; the two latter orders taking the place of the former in Arizona when the Jesuits were expelled. The mission originated from the necessity of assembling the wilder Indian tribes in pueblo villages, where discipline could be enforced. The missions, like the presidios, or garrisons, were intended to be merely footholds in the gradual advance. The missionaries accompanied the soldiers and small citizen colonies, the places left behind being occupied by the secular priests.



By the end of the seventeenth century the vicinity of what is now the Mexican Border could not yet boast more than a few white families of Spanish origin. Even in Sinaloa, on the other side of our present Border, there were but six hundred white families, and there were still fewer in Sonora. However, although there were but 250 Spaniards in Santa Fe (then the only Spanish settlement in New Mexico) in 1630,<sup>44</sup> the Spanish population of the Province had slowly increased to 2,500 settlers in the upper Rio Grande valley by the year 1680, and a few more drifted into the neighborhood within the next three years. In 1659 the mission of Guadalupe had been founded at El Paso. When the Pueblo Indians revolted in 1783, four hundred Spaniards were killed and 2,200 whites of New Mexico retreated to the El Paso settlement, and soon erected a presidio as a protection from the aborigines. By 1692 the Pueblos were reconquered and a colony of 800 soldiers and settlers again occupied the Pueblo region. Three years later the new villa of Santa Cruz de la Cañada was founded with seventy families in the vicinity. It was not until 1697, however, that Spanish rule over the Pueblos was finally secured.

While slow progress was being made to bring New Mexico into contact with the region which is now western Texas, hostile Indians constantly menaced the border. For a while Spanish expeditions entered Texas, but imminent danger to Florida temporarily drew attention away from Texas after 1693. Still earlier, in 1625, the Florida missions had been extended to the Appalache district owing to the fear of foreign intrusion; and the occupation of the Carolinas by the English and the descent of the Mississippi by Marquette in 1673 had been viewed by the Spaniards with considerable concern.

By 1713 the Spaniards had become so alarmed by the





### THE SUBSCRIBER.

*Having removed to No. 308, south side of Market street, three doors above Ninth street,*  
WILL CONTINUE TO RECEIVE MERCHANDIZE INTENDED FOR  
**PITTSBURG, BEDFORD, CHAMBERSBURG, SHIPPINSBURG, CARLISLE, YORK,**

THE CONESTOGA WAGON

From an Advertisement in an Old Philadelphia Paper



French activities on the Red River and across the Mississippi, that they once more began to occupy Texas. Thus there began another border struggle for the control of Texas and the plains south of the Platte River. Meanwhile the Spanish frontier was pushed northward into Arizona; while, at the same time, the encroachments of Georgia and Louisiana were reducing Spanish territory in Florida and its adjacent regions. Missions and ranches were established in southern Arizona. By the year 1760 there were 7,666 Spaniards in fourteen settlements in the upper district of New Mexico, and 3,588 about El Paso. The Spanish soldiers were constantly occupied in putting down the uprisings of Navajos, Yutes, Comanches and Apaches. After trying difficulties, three missions and a presidio were planted in eastern Texas, below the site of Eagle Pass, at the beginning of the eighteenth century. Small colonies of Spaniards settled in the vicinity of the missions, which were at first weak and isolated. But later this group had grown to ten missions and four presidios, which came definitely under Spanish rule after a truce between France and Spain. The recurring Apache and Comanche wars made it imperative that the Gulf coast be colonized, so that the attention of the Spaniards was diverted to that region. Thus a number of settlements had been established in the Gulf region in 1749.

By 1763 Sinaloa and southern Sonora were no longer frontier regions, and there was a considerable, if scattered population of whites that now began to push into California. In 1770 the ports of San Diego and Monterey were occupied, and soon after San Francisco was established. Within the next seven years the missions of San Antonio, San Gabriel, San Luis Obispo, Monterey and San Francisco were all founded. But California still lacked white settlers; so it became necessary

to start two Spanish pueblos at Monterey and also the pueblo of San José, which was set up in the Santa Clara Valley, with a neighboring mission. Another pueblo was established near San Gabriel mission, called Pueblo de los Angeles, which was founded by eleven families of colonists recruited from Sinaloa and Sonora. In the midst of the Apache and Yuma wars and massacres, the Anza route to California was closed and settlement was negligible; but in 1781 more soldiers arrived, and the following year the Mission of San Buenaventura and the presidio of Santa Barbara were founded and a mission started at the latter place in 1786.<sup>45</sup> In the succeeding years the Spanish influence on the Pacific coast was incorporated in but twenty-one missions altogether. Thus the Royal Road, from the Mission of San Diego de Alcalá to distant Sonoma, traversed a region which, with the hinterland valleys, presented the picture of a veritable wilderness when compared to the populous English settlements of the Atlantic seaboard. For that reason California has become Anglo-Saxon in character at the present day, and the almost negligible pure Spanish element has in general been absorbed by the Anglo-Saxon community. But of this more, later.

At the time when England took over Acadia from the French, the Europeans had established a wide circle of frontier posts, or settlements and plantations, from Cape Breton, up the St. Lawrence to Lake Superior, and from that lake throughout the course of the Mississippi River to the Gulf, Mobile Bay and the Spanish posts and missions round the shores of Florida, and thence along the English seaboard Colonies up to Cape Breton again. Within this circle of French and Spanish posts and English settlements was an unexplored wilderness occupied by savages, who while they did not number over 180,000 at the most, were skilled in barbarous and crafty

warfare and were a constant menace to the outposts and scattered settlements of the white colonists. It was inevitable that these savages, surrounded as they were by rival white communities, should take sides in the series of conflicts between France and England for supremacy in North America; and it likewise proved inevitable that, as a result of the peace of 1726, the Indians should give way before white expansion, eventually facing not only banishment to the reservations mostly to the west of the Mississippi, but also the ultimate extinction of their race north of the Rio Grande.

The Spanish regions in Florida and vicinity were, like the other Spanish colonies which were to become parts of the United States, merely northern outposts of the vast and populous Spanish colonies south of the Rio Grande and in the West Indies. The development of Florida and other outposts was left to wealthy noblemen, who controlled the Indians as proprietary conquerors. Thus, at the outbreak of the American Revolution, there were not more than a hundred families outside of St. Augustine, with its British garrison and some Minorcan, Spanish, creole, English and German town-folk, while the interior of Florida was yet a wilderness haunted by savages. In West Florida at that time there were very few Spaniards, with some French, creoles, Negroes and of course Indians. Mostly, however, the population of that territory was then composed of Americans from the old English colonies—as well as some English and a few Scotch—who had followed the Ohio and Tennessee in flatboats or traveled the trails of Indian traders. Many of these latter, the Americans included, later remained Royalists during the Revolution because of their hatred of the unmannered Carolinian mountaineers.

France took advantage of the peace of Ryswyk to ex-

to start two Spanish pueblos at Monterey and also the pueblo of San José, which was set up in the Santa Clara Valley, with a neighboring mission. Another pueblo was established near San Gabriel mission, called Pueblo de los Angeles, which was founded by eleven families of colonists recruited from Sinaloa and Sonora. In the midst of the Apache and Yuma wars and massacres, the Anza route to California was closed and settlement was negligible; but in 1781 more soldiers arrived, and the following year the Mission of San Buenaventura and the presidio of Santa Barbara were founded and a mission started at the latter place in 1786.<sup>45</sup> In the succeeding years the Spanish influence on the Pacific coast was incorporated in but twenty-one missions altogether. Thus the Royal Road, from the Mission of San Diego de Alcalá to distant Sonoma, traversed a region which, with the hinterland valleys, presented the picture of a veritable wilderness when compared to the populous English settlements of the Atlantic seaboard. For that reason California has become Anglo-Saxon in character at the present day, and the almost negligible pure Spanish element has in general been absorbed by the Anglo-Saxon community. But of this more, later.

At the time when England took over Acadia from the French, the Europeans had established a wide circle of frontier posts, or settlements and plantations, from Cape Breton, up the St. Lawrence to Lake Superior, and from that lake throughout the course of the Mississippi River to the Gulf, Mobile Bay and the Spanish posts and missions round the shores of Florida, and thence along the English seaboard Colonies up to Cape Breton again. Within this circle of French and Spanish posts and English settlements was an unexplored wilderness occupied by savages, who while they did not number over 180,000 at the most, were skilled in barbarous and crafty



warfare and were a constant menace to the outposts and scattered settlements of the white colonists. It was inevitable that these savages, surrounded as they were by rival white communities, should take sides in the series of conflicts between France and England for supremacy in North America; and it likewise proved inevitable that, as a result of the peace of 1726, the Indians should give way before white expansion, eventually facing not only banishment to the reservations mostly to the west of the Mississippi, but also the ultimate extinction of their race north of the Rio Grande.

The Spanish regions in Florida and vicinity were, like the other Spanish colonies which were to become parts of the United States, merely northern outposts of the vast and populous Spanish colonies south of the Rio Grande and in the West Indies. The development of Florida and other outposts was left to wealthy noblemen, who controlled the Indians as proprietary conquerors. Thus, at the outbreak of the American Revolution, there were not more than a hundred families outside of St. Augustine, with its British garrison and some Minorcan, Spanish, creole, English and German town-folk, while the interior of Florida was yet a wilderness haunted by savages. In West Florida at that time there were very few Spaniards, with some French, creoles, Negroes and of course Indians. Mostly, however, the population of that territory was then composed of Americans from the old English colonies—as well as some English and a few Scotch—who had followed the Ohio and Tennessee in flatboats or traveled the trails of Indian traders. Many of these latter, the Americans included, later remained Royalists during the Revolution because of their hatred of the unmannered Carolinian mountaineers.

France took advantage of the peace of Ryswyk to ex-

tend her dominion in the Mississippi Valley and on the Gulf. Biloxi was founded in 1699 and in 1701 Detroit was occupied, temporarily barring the English from the great Western domain. In 1702 Iberville moved the Biloxi settlement to Mobile Bay to check the Spaniards at Pensacola, the new colony being known as St. Louis. In 1710 the colony was moved to a new site and was called Mobile. Under Governor Cadillac (the founder of Detroit) some emigrants were sent over from France.

In 1717, when Fort Rosalie had been erected on the site of Natchez, there were about seven hundred Frenchmen in Louisiana. In 1718 New Orleans was founded. At about this time also a poorer quality of immigrants from France were settled on the tracts of the Red River, the Yazoo and the Mississippi. Also, it might be said in passing, a large number of Negro slaves were introduced, mostly from the West Indies. By 1720 the white population of Louisiana was about 5,000, but the menace of Negro dominance in numbers had become so great that the intermarriage of whites with the Negroes was made unlawful. The menace of the Indian conspiracy to exterminate the whites of that region was broken in 1729, when the French, with their allies, the Choctaws, scattered the Natchez nation.

In 1743 the whites on the Gulf had actually declined to 3,200, and there were 2,000 slaves; while the Illinois country boasted altogether only 1,500 persons. Nor was there any considerable development within the next twenty years of French influence within the New Orleans region. The Illinois district benefited somewhat by the addition of 800 new colonists in 1719, who came mostly from Canada and New Orleans. The new forts Chartres, St. Philippe and Prairie du Rocher, and in fact the whole Illinois district, had become attached to Louisiana, with Terre Haute the dividing line between Louisiana and





Canada. Negro slaves were now brought into the Illinois region to raise tobacco. Lead mines on the Missouri and Maramec were developed by some 200 French miners and 500 Negroes from Santo Domingo. As early as 1712 settlers were living about the salines of Missouri. After the Fox and Sauk wars were ended in 1733, the French sought a route to the Pacific. French explorers penetrated to the Rocky Mountains, and by 1752 these voyageurs had "reached the Rockies by way of nearly every stream between the Red River and the Saskatchewan". French traders had fraternized with the tribes of eastern and northern Texas and penetrated as far as the Spanish settlements, and by the middle of the eighteenth century the French were looking longingly toward New Mexico. At first the hostile Apaches and Comanches jealousy restricted the French from intercourse with various tribes with which they were in conflict. But the French had already established themselves among the Wichitas of the Red River region and the tribes of northeastern Texas, and they were not to be discouraged from making further progress.<sup>46</sup>

Perhaps it would be well to mention here a little known historical fact, namely the important settlement of Germans on the Mississippi River, thirty miles from New Orleans, in the year 1723.<sup>47</sup> First called the German Coast, these skilful German farmers won from the soil such abundant harvests that the French called the section the Gold Coast.

The French settlements of the northern wilderness were in three clusters; around Detroit, at Vincennes and in the so-called Illinois Towns. The French posts were merely groups of log cabins with few homesteads and only a small party of soldiers, priests and traders. The Recollet, Sulpician and Jesuit monks wielded a remarkable power over the thousands of bloodthirsty savages.

The rapid advancement of all the English Colonies was in marked contrast to the laborious march of the French territories. It is true that the French had for a time, with the help of their Indian allies, substantiated their claim to the valleys of the St. Lawrence and the Mississippi, with a population in Canada not one-twentieth of that of the English Colonies, yet the drain on the French manpower had exhausted Canada, and famine and the British blockade made the victory a pyrrhic one. So, after Pontiac's defeat the whole of the vast Western wilderness was destined to fall to the British.<sup>48</sup>

By the Peace of Paris in 1763, France surrendered to England Canada, St. John's, Cape Breton, and all that part of Louisiana which was east of the Mississippi except the island of Orleans. Spain ceded Florida to England. France surrendered to Spain all the territory west of the Mississippi and the isle of Orleans.<sup>49</sup> The French creoles of New Orleans and a few smaller towns that were held by Spanish garrisons vainly protested against this treaty.

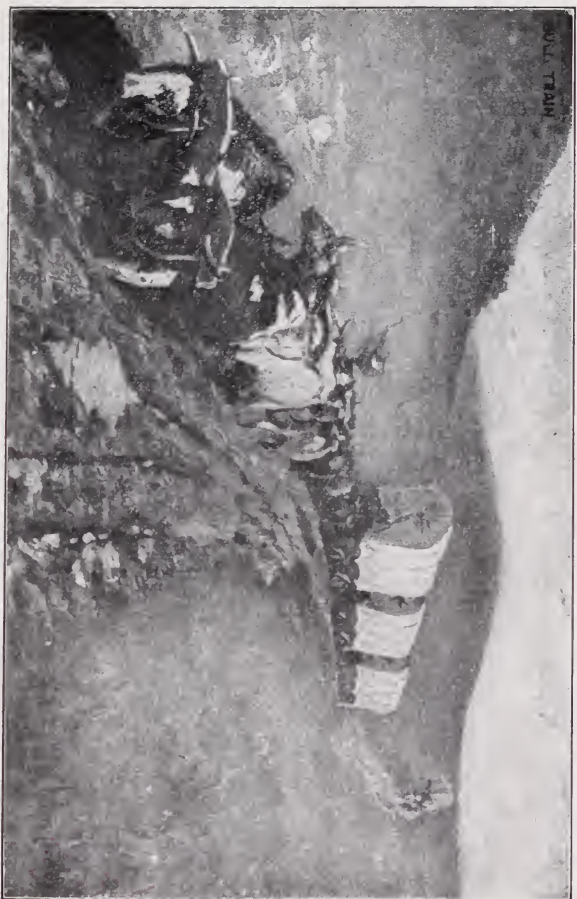
It has been said that in the struggle for North America the French and Spaniards sent capable leaders, without any settlers to speak of. The Germans, fleeing from a disunited country, sent plenty of settlers but very few leaders. But the English sent both leaders and colonists. As a result Louisiana, Florida and West Florida, Texas, California and other regions, in fact the entire North American continent north of the Rio Grande fell to the Anglo-Saxons. "French and Germans in Louisiana and Pennsylvania remained at home, but the descendants of the British Colonists trekked across the continent, leaving tiny self-conscious nuclei of population in their wake, and so established ethnic and cultural standards for the whole country."<sup>50</sup>



The figures for the Census of 1790 (3,929,214) do not include the scattered population of the unorganized Territory Northwest of the Ohio, and parts of what is now Vermont, which, it has been thought, might have brought the population of the English Colonies up to 4,000,000; or, in other words, the population of these unorganized districts may have had some 70,000 white inhabitants.<sup>51</sup> Over half of these must have been French. Nor must we assume that because the French trappers sometimes took Indian squaws to wife that there was not also a great majority of sturdy, fearless and God-fearing French pioneers. Moreover, there were some white women in the French community. Perhaps nearly all the other quarter of this population was represented by the settlers from New England and a negligible scattering of other nationalities. Naturally the men must have far outnumbered the women among these first enterprising pioneers battling with the wilderness. The disparity of women in the case of both the French and English pioneers in this region inevitably leads to the conclusion that this population did not grow quite as rapidly on the average, as did the old stock enumerated in the Census of 1790. Nevertheless, wherever there were families in the backwoods, it was certain that these families were large.

We now come to the difficult task of estimating just what proportion of our present-day population is due to acquisitions to the original English Colonies. "In the Northwest Territory there were many descendants of the French Colonists, others were added to the American people by the Louisiana purchase, while the acquisition of Florida, Texas, New Mexico and California brought in a Spanish element, most of which, however, presently disappeared into Mexico and Cuba."<sup>52</sup> To this day the delta lands of Louisiana, including about

half the area of the State, are the home of the French-speaking inhabitants known as creoles.<sup>53</sup> Within the bounds of this region lie two kinds of delta country, divided by the Bayou Teche. West of the Bayou lie beautiful prairies, where the herdsmen are descendants of the Acadians banished from Nova Scotia in 1755, who still speak the patois of their forefathers and have the blue eyes and light brown hair of Northern France. Generally these herdsmen are spoken of as creoles, but they were not so recognized by the true creoles (descendants of the French nobility who escaped the revolution in France), whose abode is the region of lakes and bayous. A slight sprinkling of high class Spaniards have also contributed to the original creole stock. The lowest class of whites, however, include the descendants of mongrel adventurers from Santo Domingo and the Spanish main.<sup>54</sup> While the character of the Louisiana parishes is French to this day, nevertheless, even before 1790, the Anglo-Saxons poured into the region. In 1775 General Lyman led a band of New Englanders to the lower Mississippi, while Colonel Putnam led another contingent to the Yazoo region. The following year another colony under Mathew Phelps also settled on the lower Mississippi. West Florida had also received strong infusions of English blood. Immediately after this territory came under British rule, a company of English Colonials from North Carolina had landed and settled at Natchez and Baton Rouge. Before the Revolution many settlers also arrived from England, the West Indies, and most of the English Colonies, including New England. The majority of them settled on the Mississippi, between Manchac and Natchez. These were followed by hundreds more from Virginia and the Carolinas, and a further immigration from New England. In fact it has been estimated that more than half the pop-



EMIGRANT TRAIN BOUND FOR THE GREAT WEST



ulation of Mobile was English or English Colonial. Moreover the Highlanders defeated in North Carolina in 1776 took refuge in West Florida, and other Loyalists from Georgia and South Carolina made their homes on the Tombigbee River and the Tensaws Bayou. Also during the Revolution many Southern Loyalists settled in East Florida. Thus it is necessary to take into consideration the Anglo-Saxon element, in the estimate of the annexed white stock of these French and Spanish regions.

From various lines of reasoning, we may at least roughly calculate the combined population according to nationality of those regions (which were to be annexed to the United States) for the year 1790.<sup>55</sup> Then we may determine approximately the number of their descendants proportionately in the 1920 population of the country, on the assumption that these various outlying early elements increased fourteen-fold from 1790 to 1920, as was the case with the old stock of the English Colonies, as follows:

	1790 Estimate	1920 Estimate
French .....	69,000	966,000
English .....	39,250	549,500
Spanish .....	17,500	245,000
Scotch-Irish, Highlander .....	3,250	45,500
German .....	500	7,000
Totals .....	129,500	1,813,000

### EXPANSION OF THE ANGLO-SAXONS

After 1790 the overpopulated districts east of the Alleghenies became somewhat cramped as the result of the unparalleled rate of increase and the contribution of thousands of immigrants from Northwestern Europe, so that great numbers of adventurous pioneers now began to strike out for the magnificent Western country, following the lines of least resistance.

Virginians and Carolinians, following that resourceful pioneer Daniel Boone, were the first to penetrate the unknown wilderness. Then followed veritable floods of settlers, striking Westward by the Cumberland Gap, Boone's Wilderness Road, Braddock's Road, Forbes' Road and the National Highway; by the Genessee Turnpike, the Erie Canal (from Utica, through Rochester, to Buffalo), and to and along the Great Lakes and beyond; along the Ohio, down the Mississippi and up the Missouri; and, eventually, along the California, Oregon and Santa Fé trails.<sup>56</sup>

In 1787 the "Ohio Company" was formed by New Englanders; its purpose being to settle the West. The "Ordinance of 1787," which preceded the grant from Congress, applied to the "Territory Northwest of the Ohio." A restless seeking for better lands now caused a great many New England Puritans to enter not only the neighboring parts of New York and New Jersey, but also Pennsylvania and the Mohawk Valley. The Susquehanna Valley soon contained many Yankees, as well as the English, Germans and Scotch-Irish. Also floods of sturdy settlers of Puritan stock were soon crossing New York State and pouring into Missouri and Illinois. It is said that the latter State had received some 17,000 settlers by 1825.<sup>57</sup>

"The part played by the Erie Canal in the development of the country is indicated by the fact that between 1820 and 1840 the population of New York State jumped from 1,372,812 to 2,428,921. Along the route of the canal towns were built, cities grew like mushrooms, and farm lands were developed. Pennsylvania gained somewhat, but Ohio was the greatest gainer outside of New York. The towns in the Western Reserve grew rapidly. . . .

"The majority of those who came from New England



This map illustrates the proposed international boundary between the United States and Mexico in the Oregon-California region. The boundary is depicted as a dashed line, starting from the Pacific coast near San Francisco and extending southwards. Key locations marked along the boundary include San Francisco, Sacramento, Portland, Eugene, and Medford. The map also shows major rivers such as the Klamath, Rogue, and Rogue, and various forts and military installations. The boundary line is shown as a dashed line, with various points of interest marked along it.





followed the Erie Canal, Lake Erie, and wagon roads onward. . . . It was by this route that the descendants of those Pilgrims and Puritans who had been frontier-builders in 1620 and 1630, pushed on to build states on new lines in the old Northwest." <sup>58</sup>

Connecticut and Rhode Island Colonial stock moved north along the Connecticut River and westward to Ohio. Massachusetts, New York and Pennsylvania sent their sons and daughters to the Middle West; Virginia and North Carolina to Tennessee and Kentucky; South Carolina and Georgia to Arkansas, Missouri and Northwestward. Iowa was settled in greatest part by New England, and then, in turn, helped to contribute to the settlement of California and Oregon.

The farmers of Vermont crossed Lake Champlain into northern New York. Those of Massachusetts proceeded west along the Mohawk Valley to Buffalo. The Connecticut emigrants crossed the New York State line into Westchester, Putnam, Dutchess, Orange and Ulster counties, and thence continued westward, establishing themselves in the farming section still known as "the Southern tier."

The road to the West for New Englanders and New Yorkers was made extremely hazardous by a wilderness inhabited by dusky and hateful savages. Beyond the Mississippi the sturdy pioneers were forced to contest every step of their advance, and it was only remarkable courage, endurance and unswerving confidence and fortitude that gradually wore down and eliminated the wily and cruel redskins. There was no blocking of the vast Puritan influx that stopped only, eventually, at the Pacific.

"And so it came to pass . . . . that from the headwaters of the south branches of the Potomac, and from the thin-soiled upper valleys of the James, the Staunton,

the Dan, the Yadkin, the Catawba, an exodus began; and across the low passes of the Blue Ridge and the Great Smoky Mountains, and then a little later across the second crest of the Appalachians, and . . . welled up and overflowed into the heart of the continent—yet only just behind the first range it began to meet and mingle with a current of Northern frontier blood; for down the broad valley of the Shenandoah . . . down the river courses of this valley flowed a steady stream of migration from the upper Potomac and the Pennsylvania valleys. And this mingling of blood helped to influence and shape the whole after-history of the mountain regions of the South.

“. . . Southward down the valleys of the French Broad, the Holston, the Clinch, the headwaters of the Tennessee, and northward down the Great Kanawha and the Big Sandy to the Ohio, the stream of population dividing began to flow. As the Northern stream neared the Ohio, it met and mingled with a belated flow of migration from western Pennsylvania, which by way of the Susquehanna and the forks of the Ohio now began to overtake it.

“Farther south the main current, gathering volume in the narrow valleys of the upper Tennessee . . . forced its way across the Cumberland Gap by what became known as the Wilderness Road to the headwaters of the Kentucky, the Green and the Cumberland Rivers, and thence with down grades and water transportation to the Ohio, there to mingle and be lost in that current of Northern blood which in ever-increasing volume was now flowing directly down the Ohio in flat boat and barge.

“This mingling and crossing of the two streams of migration, the one from the North, the other from the South, upon the divide about the headwaters of the



### PIONEER CABIN IN THE FAR WEST

Expansion into the West was primarily a succession of leap-frogs of incoming populations over communities already settled on the frontiers. For example, the frontier families of 1790, having completed rude settlements in the Appalachian foothills, were content to allow the successive wave of newcomers to pass beyond into the wilderness to become in their turn the vanguard of settlement and expansion.





tributaries to the Tennessee and the Ohio, explain some otherwise apparently anomolous facts of population and political affiliations—a strong Southern strain in the parts of Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois which border upon the river, showing itself in speech and customs and political sympathies, and an equally strong Northern strain in the mountains of East Tennessee and Kentucky. So strong is this crossing that during the Civil War the Southern sympathizers north of the Ohio, and the Northern sympathizers of the mid-region south of the Ohio, made of these territories . . . a debatable ground held entirely by neither, battled for by both. . . .<sup>59</sup>

“It was up hill and over mountains toward the South; it was down hill and by comparatively level grades toward the north; and the law of gravitation won the day. Soon the hardy pioneers began to cross the river line upon the north to the rich beech lands of Ohio, then later to the more open prairie reaches of Indiana and Illinois.”<sup>60</sup>

In 1800 the Natchez District (between the Spanish demarcation and the Yazoo Delta) had a population of 6,000 which included an English influx from West Florida, between 1763 and 1783; the new accessions of Americans after 1783, who assured the later annexation to the United States; a few French dissatisfied with Spanish rule in Louisiana; a remnant of Spaniards; and an increasing number of Westerners. The west side of the Mississippi River was occupied by river men from Holston and the Allegheny; New Englanders from the Muskingum settlements; French, English and Scotch traders from the Illinois River; French voyageurs; and a few Spaniards, mostly officials from the Louisiana side. In Upper Louisiana the French and American strains predominated, from St. Charles and St.

Louis to Madrid. Some of the French had belonged originally to the east side of the River and had emigrated from the Wabash and Illinois after 1763, when the latter regions were acquired by England.

By 1803 English traders were entering the tribes west of the Mississippi, ascending the Missouri and Arkansas Rivers, and reaching the Texas Border overland or up the rivers.

In 1815 the distribution of population in the New Orleans Territory, which comprised the present State of Louisiana, was along the Mississippi for seventy miles above and thirty miles below New Orleans. This Territory then contained 90,000 inhabitants, mostly French creoles, with a sprinkling of Americans. The French occupied the Red River continuously up to Alexandria. In the old Florida parishes on the east bank the Americans predominated.

The Report of the Superintendent of the Census for December 1, 1852, gives some very interesting sidelights on the nomadic character of the Northern folk, in contrast to the relatively stay-at-home character of the Southerners; at a period when immigration had just begun to attain considerable proportions, and when the American white population was very homogeneous.

It is pointed out in the Report that in the free States the general movement was due west—from New York, for instance, to Michigan and Wisconsin, and from Pennsylvania to Ohio. From Maine and New Hampshire it went principally to Massachusetts; from the other New England States more to New York than elsewhere; but natives of all were found in the Northwest States in large numbers. The middle States were also represented by increasing numbers. The emigration from the Northern Atlantic States amounted to nearly 1,200,000. And so strong was the passion for motion that the West itself

supplied a population to the further West. Ohio sent 215,000 to the three States beyond her; Indiana attracted 120,000 from Ohio, but sent on 50,000 of her own; Illinois took 95,000 from Ohio and Indiana, and gave 7,000 to young Iowa; and that State, though not twenty years redeemed from the Indians, gained nearly 60,000 by the restlessness of the three, and, in its turn, breaks over the two feeble barriers of the Rocky Mountains to supply Utah and Oregon with 1,200 natives of Iowa. Between 1800 and 1850 the valley of the Mississippi and the Upper Lake Country changed from a vast wasteland, in which there were less than 40,000 persons clustered around the rude forts that gave them protection from the Indians, to an imperial domain of 10,000,000 citizens cultivating fifty-three million acres of improved land.

In the year 1920 much of the West is still the child of Plymouth Rock, and its backbone is the sturdy New England element. Probably a fourth at least of the blood of the American people comes from the twenty thousand English Puritans who came to Massachusetts and Connecticut between 1618 and 1640. Moreover, for a hundred years the proportion of children in the Western States has been from thirty to one hundred per cent greater than in the older States.<sup>61</sup>

Meanwhile, as we have already seen, concurrently with the movement from New England, many inhabitants in 1790 swept up the Mohawk Valley, moved along the course of the Potomac and also crossed the Appalachian range into Kentucky and Tennessee. The Report of the Superintendent of the Census in 1852 goes on to show that the Westward movement reached Ohio, Indiana and even, in small numbers, to Michigan, Wisconsin and Illinois by 1800; in which year Kentucky had increased to 220,000 in population, as compared to her 12,000 in 1782.

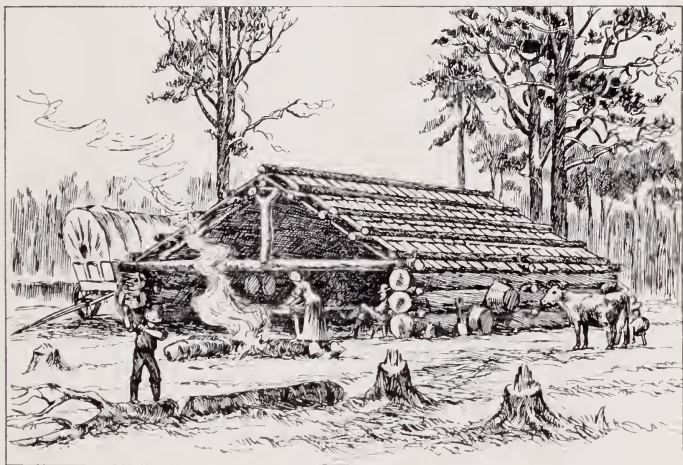
The choicest adventuring blood of the seaboard States—Virginian Anglicans, Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, slavery-hating Quakers, Yankees<sup>62</sup> and a number of "Pennsylvania Dutch," spread into the strategically located State of Ohio, crossroads of migration, the hill-enclosed hamlets of freedom-loving people, which were to become the stations of the "underground railroad" that aided escaped slaves to attain refuge in the North.

While it is admitted that there was considerable spread of population from the original Southern States to the new territory of the West, it was probably not as great as the spread of the Puritans from New England. The spirit of the West in behalf of the Union at the outbreak of the Civil War betokens the preponderance of the Puritans.

When Thomas Jefferson bought Louisiana from France in 1803, he sent General Pike to explore the new region. At that time, incidentally, the Osage Indians, kin of the Sioux, had their tribal headquarters in the Ozark Mountains, to which region they had removed from the Southeastern seaboard many years prior to the coming of the Spanish explorers. To this same Osage nation (from whose sub-tribes the States of Iowa, the Dakotas, Kansas, Missouri and Arkansas were to get their names) Pike returned a number of Indian prisoners of war whom the government had held as hostages, and was enabled to obtain then a number of Osage guides, who accompanied him from St. Louis and still remained with Pike's force when the Spaniards were met for the first time and defeated for possession of most of the region which was eventually to fall to the United States through the Purchase.

In the following year Lewis and Clark started up the Missouri on their memorable journey to the Pacific.

In 1812 merchants from St. Louis blazed the Santa



## PIONEER LIFE IN THE WEST

Europe, as well as the American Colonies, aided in the currents of human life spreading toward the West, at least to some extent. For example, 750 Separatists from Wurttemberg founded the communal settlements of Harmony and Economy in Pennsylvania, and New Harmony, Indiana, in 1803, and Zoar, Ohio, in 1817; Scotch Highlanders settled Pembina, North Dakota, in 1812; German Mennonites entered the Dakotas, and a community of Welsh folk settled down in the district known as Welsh Hills, adjacent to Granville, Ohio.





Fé trail. From 1822 to 1843 great caravans, some of them including 350 men and 230 wagons, "hit the trail" for the Far West.

In 1840 our frontier extended in almost a direct line from Lake Huron across Lake Michigan to Prairie du Chien, whence it wandered southwesterly to St. Joseph, and thence swept due south to the Gulf. In the next ten years the Westward movement reached the upper courses of the Missouri River by way of Iowa, and Nebraska and Kansas were opened up; while another stream proceeded down the Santa Fé trail. After 1846 Mormons journeying from Missouri to Utah, as well as gold-seekers to Idaho and Montana, passed up the Missouri River.<sup>63</sup>

In 1847 the discovery of gold in California attracted a great number of pioneers. Some went in ships around Cape Horn; others crossed the Isthmus of Panama, whence they made their way northward; while throngs attempted to cross the great plains and the Rockies in wagon trains. The tale of the days of the "Forty-niners," and thereafter, depicts the expansion of heroic Nordic folk filling the vast wasteplaces of the continent. The banks of the Missouri in the region of Independence were dotted with the tents and prairie schooners of the pioneers, who were awaiting an auspicious day to make a start. When the grass of the prairie was at last long (to feed the cattle and horses on the journey) the various wagon trains, one after another, started out upon the long trail across the great plains. From Fort Leavenworth to Fort Laramie, at the base of the Rockies, the caravans followed the road to El Dorado, or, in the case of many, decided to remain in such fertile meadows as happened to come to their attention. The younger men traced the line of march by landmark and ford, while men of all ages guarded the flanks of the train from at-

tacks by roving bands of bloodthirsty savages. Many of the children walked up to ten or twenty miles a day and thought nothing of it, and also herded the cattle as deftly as did the grown folk. The women continued their household tasks under most extraordinary circumstances, gave birth to children, and seized a gun when necessity arose. Most of these wagon trains were able to repulse the attacks of encircling savage horsemen, by coiling into a circle which acted as a rude fort. Sometimes it was otherwise, but the bleaching skeletons of a wagon train party never daunted the thousands of caravaneers who followed. Love and death, suffering and indomitable courage, were all represented amidst the adventures of these brave people of Anglo-Saxon heritage who wrote an imperishable epic of race expansion for future generations to profit by.

By 1852 there were 250,000 hardy pioneers in California, yet nevertheless the real settlement of the Pacific Coast occurred about a quarter of a century later.

The colonization of the Far West was a succession of Indian wars, in which the Redskins pitted all their cunning against the skill, and sometimes cupidity, of the settlers and soldiers. From the time that our army occupied New Mexico, after the Mexican War, until long after the Civil War, periodic combats were fought with the Indians of the plains and the Rockies. In 1847 there took place the Pueblo War and massacre, which was to a great extent instigated by embittered Mexican renegades. This insurrection was no more than put down when the Shoshones went on the warpath in the vicinity of Walla-Walla; an attempt being made to discourage pioneer settlers on the trail through the Grande Ronde, over the Blue Mountains and down the Walla-Walla to the Columbia. The Shoshones were at last defeated, and their remnants wandered amidst the mountain gorges



### THE "FORTY-NINERS"

"Pike County" was the generic cognomen applied by the "Forty-Niners" to the gangling types from the southern Middle West, who flocked to California to join other folk from the ends of the earth in seeking the precious metal.



for years thereafter. Then, from 1851 to 1853, came the skirmishes between the utterly fearless, and sometimes ruthless, goldseekers, and the California tribes who resented their advent; and whatever their methods, it is certain that these white adventurers struck greater fear in the souls of the Redskins than had ever before been accomplished by the whites. Also in the middle of the century there broke out the Rogue River massacres and wars; while the Kiowas, Apaches, Pawnees and Comanches had formed a coalition against the whites. The Cheyennes held out from the latter alliance and in 1854 formed a coalition with the Arapahoes.

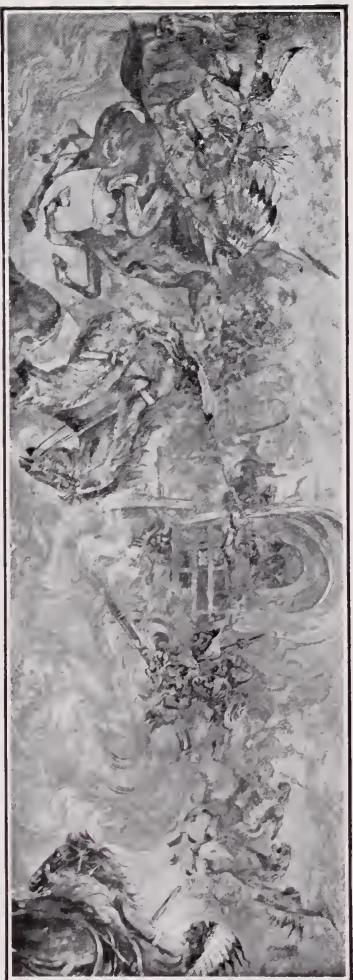
But the gold rush of 1849 had brought 80,000 whites to the Pike's Peak country, and their numbers protected them from the Indians, who respected them for their prowess tried upon many a previous occasion. Then, too, these sturdy miners and settlers benefited from the very circumstance of their strategic occupancy of a region which was between two Indian factions; for the plains Indians, as well as the mountain Indians, both sought the friendship of the whites in order to secure arms and ammunition for their tribal conflicts. In the meanwhile, down in the Southwest, Kit Carson was chastising the plundering Navajos. In 1857 the Mormons, who had previously aided the soldiers in putting down Indian uprisings, now, at least in some cases, turned against their fellow settlers, and the United States government later executed the ring-leaders for their part in the massacres of Mountain Meadow. From this period up to the Civil War, the indomitable Apaches and Arapahoes carried on marauding expeditions that were a terror to the wagon trains wending their way along the southern trails. During and after the Civil War the Indians waged open warfare with the military, and it was not until as late as the year 1884 that these warriors

were induced to settle upon reservations. After the Civil War the mountains between the Continental Divide and the plains became the destiny of wagon trains because of new discoveries of gold. One route to the gulch region led through South Pass and northward by way of Fort Hall. Another way was to go by boat up the Missouri and Yellowstone Rivers and thence through the country of the Crows. Both the Sioux and the Crows (Dakotas) obstructed the building of forts on the proposed new road to Montana across the Big Piney. In 1862 occurred Red Cloud's massacre in Minnesota. Four years later Sitting Bull, Crazy Horse and other Sioux chieftains resented the invasion of the Black Hills reservation by goldseekers; and out of this circumstance evolved the ambush and massacre of Custer and his soldiers. The Blackfeet and Modocs also gave considerable, if somewhat less, trouble to soldiers and pioneers. In 1876 Chief Joseph and his Nez Percés went on the warpath. Two years later the discovery of silver mines on the Ute reservation and the consequent influx of miners led to an uprising of the Utes of White River. And last, but not least, of the Indian troubles may be mentioned the series of Indian disorders attendant upon the so-called Messiah Craze and Ghost Dance.

Benton the historian attests to the following fact: "The Oregon immigration . . . was not an act of government leading the people and protecting them, but, like all the other great emigrations and settlements of the Anglo-Saxon . . . on our continent, it was the act of the people, going forward without government aid or countenance, establishing their possession, and compelling the government to follow with its shield and spread it over them."

The early populating of the United States bears a striking analogy to the first great commingling of Nor-





### INDIANS ATTACKING AN EMIGRANT TRAIN

Part of the population that poured into the West resulted from the Civil War. Intrepid men from New England, New York and the Middle Atlantic States, served shoulder to shoulder with men from the Middle West. They learned in camp tales of the wonderful regions west of the Mississippi. The free lands beckoned to many after the war, who otherwise would have returned to become farm hands in the East. This restless urge helped to build the West.



dic peoples in the British Isles. For in both cases a process of absorption and assimilation came to pass, with the men of Anglo-Saxon heritage absorbing other strains.

The expansion of the Nords over the region from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and from the frozen North to the Gulf, was, as we have already indicated, an epic of human migration that never was, or never will be approached. While this expansive movement was by no means a new impulse on the part of an Anglo-Saxon folk, yet it is not amiss to say that all the distinctive national character developed by the English yeomanry in the New World is to be attributed in the main to the augmented spirit of achievement born of the exigencies to be met with on the constantly changing frontier. The staid English yeoman had become the intrepid Yankee. It is of course true that the more or less important infusions of German, Scotch-Irish, Irish, Dutch, Huguenot and Swedish blood brought new ideas or customs to the New World, but when we consider how closely related to the Anglo-Americans were these picked strains (indeed racially identical), and moreover when we observe how quickly these strains were amalgamated with the Puritan, Quaker and Cavalier elements, we must conclude that the individuality of the American people of that day was due to environment rather than to the infusion of new blood of like racial strain. Undoubtedly each of these picked strains contained more than its share of the potential quality of Nordic resourcefulness, ambition and capability. It was that same spirit that won far-flung empires for England, France and tiny Holland; that also conquered the frontier at Jamestown, or Massachusetts Bay; at Glens Falls or Schenectady; in Kentucky or the Ozarks; in the settlement of the prairies, the plains and the great Northwest, in the

scaling of the towering ranges of the Rockies; in the stream of goldseekers and settlers into the valleys of California; and even when many frontiersmen turned eastward after reaching the Pacific, to fill up the vacant spaces of the great plains and the Southwest with the mushroom towns, the cattle and sheep ranches and the frontier forts; in fact, in all the romance associated with the Wild West, so dear to the hearts of present-day Americans.

"Expansion was in the blood of the men who opened the continent to civilization, and the purpose of those men to rule the wilderness and the plain was what gave coherence and vitality to the nation that they founded here. . . .

"Our goal, as a people, was empire, and no tribe or race or nation ever pursued an end with greater singleness of aim. . . . Farms were cleared and planted, homesteads established, families reared in the new country, and then the second or third generation moved on another week's or month's journey toward the setting sun. So the pioneer impulse worked itself out in cycles, losing nothing of intensity. . . .

"The court of law, the school, the church went with the wagon trains that crossed the Appalachians, the Mississippi and the Rockies. The civilization that our forefathers knew . . . was adaptable. Where it went it stayed; its course was steadily progressive. . . . The fortunes of individual leaders (such as Daniel Boone, Lewis and Clark, Zebulon Pike, John C. Frémont, General Custer, Davy Crockett, Sam Houston, Kit Carson and Buffalo Bill Cody) are of lesser importance in the long run than the welfare of the unnamed and unnumbered thousands who followed.

"Living conditions that seem to us hard and forbidding made up the common lot a few generations back.



### MONTEREY MISSION, CALIFORNIA

In 1846 there had been but 2,000 Mexicans and as many Americans in California. But by 1852, as a result of the gold rush of '49, there were 200,000 Anglo-Saxons alone, not to mention the Germans, French, Irish, Cornishmen, miners from South Wales and others (including the turbulent Australian convicts, many of whom were ventually deported) in California. Some of these Anglo-Saxons and others had drifted into California by sea, having come direct from Europe or elsewhere. Around Cape Horn, or across the Isthmus of Darien (where earlier Scotch and English adventurers had vainly struggled to build a "Scotch Empire" across the jungles), came part of the gold-seeking horde that were but the vanguard of an imperial migration across a continent.





The grandfathers of many of us were born in log cabins, and as boys wore homespun clothes. In hundreds of backwoods settlements practically none of the necessities and few of the luxuries (according to the standards of the time) came from the outer world. For food, clothing, and shelter, the community was practically self-sufficient. It was a self-reliant folk that grew up with such a schooling and in the fierce struggle for existence it was foreordained that only the fittest should survive. From this hard school came Lincoln—a child of the frontier if ever there was one—and thousands of others to whom the nation owes the very sinews of its frame.

“American backwoods life was narrowing, petty, provincial; yet it sent forth men of vision, breadth, and sanity. Those who pushed the frontier Westward were themselves products of frontier conditions.”<sup>64</sup>

It is the frontiersmen of the various periods of our history who have engraved upon their descendants the national type of Americans, if there be such a thing. One former member of the Census Bureau propounds the question, “What are Americans?” and then answers it, as follows:

“Primarily they are a mighty company of nearly fifty five millions of men, women and children of British ancestry, including the descendants . . . of Irish, German, and other immigrants who came to America sixty years ago<sup>65</sup> or earlier, and including also later Anglo-Saxon arrivals and their children, welded into one vast and surprisingly homogeneous element. . . . This element is the pillar which supports the Republic. It is the element which manages and controls the United States. Even in places where it is a minority it generally leads. The activities of the nation, infinite in variety and extent, both intellectual and material, are principally in the hands of persons of the native and allied stock,

The farmers are largely native, as are lawyers, clergymen, physicians, school teachers, bankers, manufacturers and managers (with comparatively few exceptions firms engaged in constructive and industrial enterprises are controlled by the old stock in the United States). Yet this is no exclusive company or class, since these vocations are open to all who qualify. . . .

"Through the years . . . came the steady march Westward and Northwestward into the wilderness of the descendants of the early settlers . . . . Hence it comes about—no American needs to be told—that the great central, inspiring, and controlling element of American population over a domain of three million square miles is singularly homogeneous and singularly at one in ideals. Any intelligent stranger from New England, entering the home of a well-to-do family . . . . in a far Southern State, would, upon inquiry, find similar origin,—perhaps the same English county,—and the existence of opinions, hopes, and principles varying from his own only to the extent which might be expected as a result of totally different climate and different environment. He would find, also, exactly the same language, varied only by a slight local accent. Were he similarly to enter a farmhouse in Iowa, he would be likely to find the descendants of respected citizens of his own State, or even county, a century ago; and they probably would exhibit . . . . some prized bits of furniture or silver that were brought over by the Pilgrims or made in Colonial days. In such households are found the old national spirit, and here, also, the traditions of the past. They are substantially the same in this basic national stock, whether its members be resident in New England, the far South or the Far West.

"The American native stock, with its assimilated early additions, is the greatest Anglo-Saxon element in the

world. In numbers it is greater than the entire combined population of England, Scotland, Wales and Canada. It possesses, except in small areas in the South, a strikingly high average of education. The real American, like his distant British forebears, is undemonstrative. He is patient under provocation, but intensely independent, and, once aroused, rather pugnacious. During the past century the native-stock element has been so strong of character that it has imparted its own ideals to many hundred thousands newcomers. It was this element that aroused itself when America entered the Great War. Large as were both population and geographic area, the nation then had no two opinions. Men and women of Maine and Oregon and Florida were doing the same things in war preparation and doing them in the same way.

"The average native American is not especially pro-British. The ancestors of many of this element emigrated from Great Britain two or three centuries ago. . . . Moreover, the Revolution left lingering traces of animosities . . . . Nevertheless, the American and the Briton, springing in the main from the same blood, speak the same language of ideals and purposes. They have much the same weaknesses and likewise similar elements of strength. When General Haig, in his famous appeal to the British armies in the dark days of 1918, told his men that their 'backs were against the wall,' a thrill went through listening America. The Anglo-Saxon stock *understood*.

## CHAPTER II

### THE "OLD" IMMIGRANT STOCK (EARLY PERIOD)

The year 1790 may be regarded as an epoch in United States history. For it not only marked the end of the colonization period, but also witnessed the start of that stream of immigrants which was gradually to become the surging flood of present-day immigration.

From a racial standpoint the so-called "old immigration" (from 1790 to about 1860), must be considered a continuance of the Colonial migration and settlement. It is true that the growing industrial era attracted many newcomers of lesser quality than the self-reliant Puritan or Cavalier stock, yet the newcomers were in general well thought of. Even the turbulent Irish of the laboring class contributed an inestimable share in the making of the railroad and the canal.

In the first three decades of the era of immigration, the great bulk of the immigrants appear to have come from the British Isles. In fact even as late as 1820 Germany sent less than 1,000 newcomers, while there was a negligible scattering from all other countries except the United Kingdom. The estimates of the United States Bureau of Statistics places the number of immigrants for the period between 1776 and 1820 at 250,000. Many experts regard this estimate as altogether too small, however, and figure the number of total arrivals to be as high as 300,000. In either case, it seems certain that by far the greatest part of these immigrants came

after the year 1790, so that we may accept the figure 250,000 as a very reasonable estimate of the unrecorded immigration and its increase from 1790 up to 1820.<sup>67</sup>

It was in the year 1820, exactly two centuries after the landing of the Pilgrims, that the government for the first time officially collected and reported immigration statistics; and during the following century the yearly record of immigration was kept, as a means to determine the contributions from foreign nations to the American people. During the first twenty-five years of recorded immigration the immigrant stream steadily increased, without fluctuating to any great extent. But from the year 1845 the crest of the immigration flood shows waves and troughs directly corresponding to economic or other variations in foreign countries, or to industrial conditions in the United States. The first great influx occurred in the decade from 1845 to 1854, when the potato famine in Ireland and the revolution in Germany brought many thousands to this country. The gold rush to California also attracted thousands, from England and other countries of Europe. Then followed a depression during the War of the Rebellion, recovery following only after the signing of peace. During the economic decline of the seventies there came another comparative lull, but with the return of prosperity the immigration wave returned with added impetus; further causes of the immense flood being the fact that Germany was undergoing an economic depression, that the movement from Scandinavia had reached a climax, and that the great subsequent influx from Italy, Russia and Austria-Hungary was developing.

The actual distribution of immigrants to the United States after 1790 is a most interesting subject for discussion, in respect to which the exigencies of this survey will allow no more than a brief *résumé*.<sup>68</sup> However



the following interesting information is revealed in the Report of the Superintendent of the Census in 1852:

"The immigration rested almost entirely in the free States. . . . Of the 2,200,000 foreigners resident in the Union, 127,000 were in the comparatively Northern States of Maryland, Virginia, Kentucky and Missouri. Less than one-third of the total immigration had entered the Lake Country and the Valley of the Mississippi. The proportion of foreign population in New York and in Massachusetts was greater than in any Western agricultural State, except Wisconsin.

"The immigration consisted principally of Irish, Germans and English.

"Three-fourths of the Irish stayed in New England and the middle States (principally in Massachusetts, New York and Pennsylvania) where the commercial and manufacturing interests are seated; and they are found in the South and West only where there are great public works in course of construction. They changed their soil and allegiance, but kept their nature intact.

"Of the Germans, more than half their number are spread over the Northwestern States, Missouri and Kentucky, and more than one-third in New York and Pennsylvania. They stay, indeed, in the towns in great numbers, devoting themselves to mechanical arts and to trades; but a large proportion are also to be found in the agricultural districts.<sup>69</sup>

"Of the English, nearly five-eighths were to be found in the Atlantic free States, about one-third in the States of the Northwest, and nearly all the residue in the Northern free States."

To the information related above may be added the statement that the Swedish settlements which bordered Lake Chautauqua in 1849<sup>70</sup> were only the vanguard of a great Scandinavian influx that later entered Wis-



consin, the neighboring North Central and Northwestern States and, in the case of the Danes, even Utah. It is not to be denied that the Scandinavians contributed to the progress of all these States.

The Dutch were comparatively few in numbers, but they were not the least in quality of the human material that contributed to the upbuilding of America. We may take as an example the group of Dutch fishermen and oystermen who left their native Zeeland in the middle of the nineteenth century to settle in the vicinity of what is now known as West Sayville, L. I. To this day the houses of the village are Dutch in design, and the Dutch tongue is spoken by the older members of the sturdy community. Other Dutch aided in the development of Michigan.<sup>71</sup>

Unfortunately our records of the early immigration from Canada are rather incomplete; for previous to 1865 thousands of Canadian and British immigrants crossed the border who were not included in the custom-house returns. It is certain, however, that very few permanent French-Canadian settlers were included in the early immigration from Canada, for the French-Canadian people were a hermit society of strict religious views, and hence very much opposed to immigration. In fact it has only been within the last two generations that the French-Canadians have been weaned from their French-speaking community by the high wages of industrial New England. And even in the new country they lived for many years in lingual groups that were almost literally Quebec parishes transferred across the border. Hence we may ignore the French-Canadians in our discussion of the early immigration from Canada.<sup>72</sup>

From the fact that the Scotch were very numerous among the earliest settlers in Canada, it might seem at first glance that the Scotch played a very considerable

part in the earliest immigration from Canada into the United States.<sup>73</sup> On the other hand, it appears that the greatest influx of British Canadians into the United States occurred at a time when there was a very marked increase of the English element among the emigrants from the United Kingdom to British North America. In fact, Lord Durham remarked in 1839 that sixty per cent of the people who reached Canada from the British Isles left almost immediately for the United States.<sup>74</sup>

When we come to differentiate between the number of Protestant Ulstermen and Catholic Irishmen in the immigration from Ireland to the United States, in the years between 1790 and 1875 or '80, we must again merely surmise. It is certain that the Scotch-Irish Protestants had formed a noticeable contingent of arrivals long before the decade of the "twenties," whereas there is no record of a mass immigration of Irish Celts previous to that decade.<sup>75</sup> In fact, it is in the several years before 1830 that the Catholic Irish first became conspicuously noticeable among the immigrants. For in the decade from 1820 to 1830 there were recorded some 50,000 immigrants from Ireland, and it is very likely that the majority of these were laborers from the South of Ireland, who came over to work upon the Erie and other canals, the railroads, and industrial projects. In the following ten years 207,000 more newcomers arrived from the Emerald Isle, part of whom would seem to have been a continuation of the stream of Irish workers from the Southern Counties of Erin.<sup>76</sup> However, there must have also been a considerable number of Scotch-Irish immigrants within this stream from Ireland, for it is recorded that in the year 1838 of that decade the Protestant counties of Antrim, Down and Fermanagh also became congested and found relief in an extensive exodus.<sup>77</sup> From all accounts and indications, the Irish-

born before 1840 were quickly assimilated with the American population, which leads to the belief that the Protestant element was present, even though in a minority, among the Irish at that period. Incidentally, it may be noted that although the immigration of Irish Catholics was steadily setting in during this period, yet nevertheless the cities of Brooklyn, Buffalo, Albany and Newark were each served by a single Catholic priest in 1834.<sup>78</sup> What a contrast to present-day conditions!

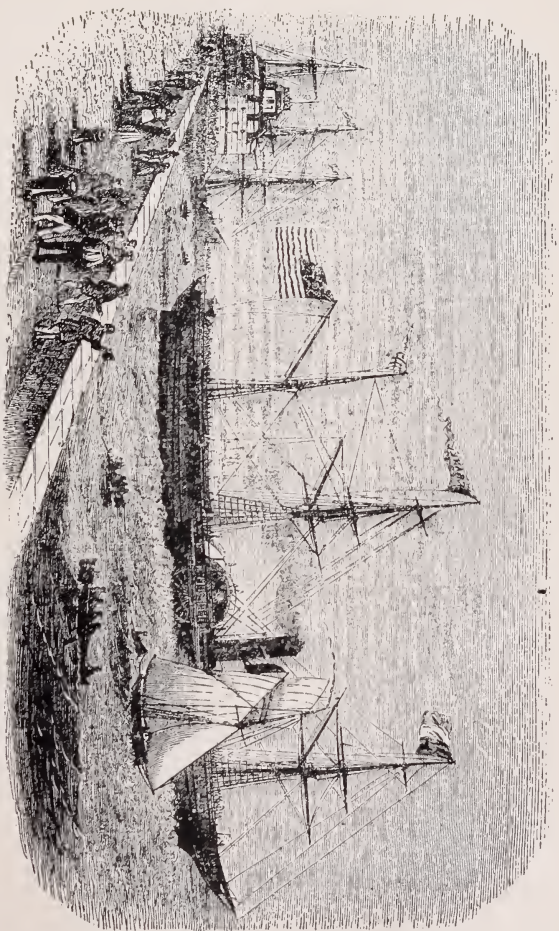
Reaching the decade of the "forties," history informs us that following upon the great potato famine in Ireland, a tremendous influx of Irish Catholics into the United States occurred. It was owing to the fact that in the two previous decades the Roman Catholic Irish had come over in a relatively inconsequential stream, and that now for the first time the American population found itself compelled to accustom itself to the new and comparatively unfamiliar element, that there was bred a distrust of Romanism and priesthood which culminated in the formation of the historic "Know-Nothing" or Nativist Party of the period. Not so generally understood is it, however, that in the era from 1850 to 1880, as well as from 1880 to 1910, the Province of Ulster in Ireland furnished, according to British emigration records, over one-quarter of the total emigration from Ireland (sixty-seven emigrants from Ulster to every one hundred inhabitants of the latter Province's average population); so that it may reasonably be supposed that the Orangemen who found their way to the United States along with the great flood from Ireland numbered at least one-tenth of the Irish total.<sup>79</sup>

From the foregoing it becomes evident that practically all our early immigration, that is, before 1875 or 1880, originated either from Northwest Europe or its daughter nations. In fact, we may go further and say

that these immigrants were practically all of the common racial strain of Northwest Europe. The only exceptions were the Jews and a scattering of white Mexicans, Italians and other unidentified nationalities. As far as the small streams from Austria-Hungary and the Russian Empire before 1860 are concerned, we may, for the purposes of this survey, very properly include them with the German and Scandinavian total, for in the case of both these Empires the immigration was composed almost entirely of Scandinavians, Germans, or Jews. As a matter of fact the immigration from Russia was but several thousands, a number hardly worth while noting in this connection. Of these the largest proportion may have been German Mennonites from the interior of Russia, and other people of German and Scandinavian ancestry from the Baltic Provinces or Poland. Others among the immigrants from Russia were the Jews, representing the vanguard of the great Hebrew exodus from Poland and Russia to the United States. There was also a scattering of Poles and Russians, but since this early immigration included persons of the better class, it is likely that most of these Slavs were noblemen or well-to-do travelers who came to the United States for a temporary sojourn, and eventually departed whence they had come.

There is a very strict difference between the earlier and the later Jewish immigration, which will be more fully explained in later chapters. Suffice it to say at present that the German Jew had in the nineteenth century enjoyed an untrammelled economic freedom, as compared to his co-religionists of Eastern Europe, who had brought down persecution upon their heads. This comparatively full measure of liberty the German Jews had taken advantage of, so that when they came to America as immigrants they quickly became prosperous and stood





The Type of Steamer (Side-Wheeler Equipped with Sails) Which Brought Over  
Many of the Immigrants of the Early Period





high in the professions. Even at the time of the Mexican War some Jewish traders had drifted as far West as San Antonio, Texas. By the year 1848 there were probably 50,000 Jews in the country, and this number was tripled before the outbreak of the Civil War. But it was not until the decade of the eighties that the Jewish immigrants began to enter the country in truly large numbers. However, in the year 1880, according to the estimate of William B. Hackenberg, there were 230,000 Jews in the United States. It is obvious that the some 150,000 in 1860 did not grow to more than 375,000 by natural increase up to the year 1920.<sup>80</sup>

Even in the year 1870 there were but 17,157 Italians in the United States, and some of these must have been counted in the 1910 census of foreign stocks. As early as 1870 these Italians "had instituted that phase of immigration history known as the 'return emigration after an indeterminate stay', a procedure unknown to any great extent to immigrants previous to that period."<sup>81</sup> Before 1880 these pioneer contingents from Italy included Ligurians, Genoese and Palermitans. At least a third of these Italian immigrants of the early period, and more probably a half of them, returned eventually to Italy.<sup>82</sup> Therefore we may assume that there were but 20,000 of these early Italian immigrants or their descendants living in 1920. As a matter of fact, many of these may actually be included in the 1910 Census of foreign stocks and may thus be counted twice, but it is impossible to avoid this dilemma. It may perhaps be well to recall at this point that we have already determined the white Mexican element of the early period to be in the neighborhood of some 12,000 in the year 1920.<sup>83</sup>

When we now come to determine the proportion of each and all of the ancestral strains mentioned above, among the descendants in 1920 of immigrants who came

to this country between the years 1790 and 1850, or even to 1870, we are compelled to admit that the sources of information and research are hardly as adequate as could be desired.<sup>84</sup> For lack of Census information as to the origin of immigrant stock which has sojourned in the United States for three or more generations back, we must necessarily resort to a more or less extensive examination of our immigration records. As a matter of fact, the purposes of this survey do not call for more than a somewhat cursory examination into the intricacies of all the facts at our disposal, although it must be admitted that far deeper research might be made by those interested in this phase of the survey.<sup>85</sup>

In the preceding chapter it has been shown that the "old stock" and the "old annexed stock" totaled 44,689,278 and 1,813,000 respectively; and in the chapters to follow it will be demonstrated that the various white immigrant stocks of the modern period and the colored element altogether amount to 49,103,387. If we subtract the sum of all these (95,605,665) from the total population of the country in 1920 (105,710,620), the difference, or 10,104,955<sup>86</sup> would obviously represent the element now under discussion—that is, the white immigrant stock of the indefinite early period.

It now becomes our aim to divide this latter figure into proportionate divisions for each ancestral element, according to the ratio of the immigrant contributions and net potential increase (taking into account also the factor of emigration) for each nationality. Thus by a roundabout method of calculation<sup>87</sup> we arrive at the following approximate estimate of the number of immigrants for the early period and their descendants, surviving in the year 1920, according to their ancestral origin:

English .....	4,410,197
Scotch, Scotch-Irish, Welsh .....	602,545
Irish .....	3,079,032
German, Austrian, Swiss, Balto-German, etc. ....	1,130,587
French .....	408,926
Scandinavian .....	35,376
Dutch, Flemish, Frisian .....	31,292
Italian (mostly North) .....	20,000
Jews (mostly Sephardim) .....	375,000
Mexican (white) .....	12,000
	<hr/>
	10,104,955

## CHAPTER III

### THE "OLD" IMMIGRANT STOCK (MODERN PERIOD)

From the highly civilized countries of Northwestern Europe there flows in a still very important stream of newcomers who by no flight of the imagination can be regarded as figuring in our immigration problem. These sturdy newcomers are to a great extent settlers, like their predecessors of the early colonization periods, or else they are skilled workmen, professional men, or at least intelligent and assimilable, if not always well educated. For the most part, it is true, they do not represent the very cream of the countries from which they come, as in the case of the contributions to our population during the Colonial period and the early period of settlement, but they are in general a very desirable contribution to our body politic. Sometimes we are too prone to think of "the immigrant" in terms of the low strata of humanity that come to America from Southern and Eastern Europe. In the case of the latter newcomers there is undoubtedly a biological, economic and social, if not a political problem that cannot be gainsaid. Of these contemporary immigrants we shall say more in the chapter to follow. But there is a vastly greater chasm of difference between what we call the "old" immigrant stock and the "new" immigrant stock than between the Puritan and Cavalier and the English and Irish immigrant of today.

In the words of William S. Rossiter, "Why . . . . should not newcomers of British stock since 1860, and

their children, be regarded as allies as well as their grandchildren? With common ancestry and ideas, they should, for some purposes at least, be reckoned with the original stock element. In Rhode Island, far back in the early Colonial days, colonist arrivals were entered in the town records as 'from home', if from Great Britain, or as 'foreigners', if from other countries. . . . Emigration to the United States of persons born in Great Britain has . . . occurred in each year that has elapsed since natives of Britain founded the North American colonies in the seventeenth century. Hence the number of natives of England, Scotland, Wales, or Canada (English) returned as residing in the United States . . . at each succeeding Census, may be regarded merely as the late manifestation of the oldest immigration movement to eastern Northern America."<sup>88</sup>

To the mind of the writer, the Englishman, for example, who refuses to renounce his allegiance to the country of his birth, but who observes every law of the land and enters into the life of the natives, to the extent of marrying an American and raising a brood of American citizens, is a far more desirable contribution to our body politic than the racially remote products of the lower strata of populations from Eastern and Southern Europe, who for various reasons rush to take out American citizenship, but who, whether of choice or otherwise, do not mingle with the native American population and do not even bring their children into contact with American home life and institutions. Certainly the time has come to differentiate between the various classes or social and racial stratas among immigrants, and to forget the false conception that, because we are all immigrants or descendants of immigrants (with the exception of the American Indians), hence we should allow any person to pass who presents the countersign,

"I am an immigrant." But of this more later in another chapter, where it can be discussed at greater length.

As we saw in the last chapter, the first great flood of immigration was composed of the Irish of the Roman Catholic faith, who began to reach great proportions after the Irish famine of the "forties." From the first, the clan spirit in the Irish was intensified not alone from their adherence to Catholicism, but to a still greater degree through their hatred of the British government, which had by no means treated them fairly. This clan feeling led to conditions not always fortunate either for the Irish themselves or the United States. Traditional hatred of England helped to produce the "Irish vote," and thus injected European jealousies into the body politic of America. In 1854 there had appeared among the Irish miners a society known as the "Molly Maguires," whose members controlled the Ancient Order of Hibernians, and were able by influence and threats to intimidate the owners and bosses, not even stopping at murder to gain their ends. The better class of Irishmen and the Roman Catholic Church were unable to check this nefarious organization once it had gained momentum, and it was not until the decade of the "seventies" that this society was shattered and its leaders hanged. The long success of this murderous organization was due to the inherent hatred of Irishmen toward any form of landlordism such as they had experienced for generations in Ireland, and their aversion toward all informers, handed down from generations of oppressed. Then again, at the close of the Civil War, some 35,000 Irish ex-officers and men of the Federal Army planned an invasion of Canada, influenced by their hatred of England. And the Sinn Fein, of more recent date, was merely an outgrowth of the same traditional animosity of the turbulent Irishman toward the impassive British government.



But in spite of these outbursts on the part of the unruly and generally ignorant class of Irish, the vast majority made excellent citizens and deplored the untoward acts of their radical co-religionists, much as they yearned for a satisfactory solution of the Irish question. It is a weakness of our republican form of government that in such cities as New York or Boston an "Irish vote" can be created, which will inevitably fall under the influence of the shrewdest and sometimes most unscrupulous politicians. Thus the bent of the Irishman to plunge into politics found an outlet in the exploitation not only of the Irish vote, but of every other foreign vote. Today, mostly through patronage, the Irish control the administration of several of our greatest American cities.

Unlike their predecessors of the early period, whom we discussed in the previous chapter, the beginning of the "seventies" brought a class of Irish immigrants who, perhaps because of a less robust physique, did not seek the country districts, or even the construction and mining camps, in such great numbers, but were more apt to remain in the large cities, where they sought any work that might offer. Being of the Catholic faith, they were wont to concentrate in sections where they could be in contact with the nearby priest. Not yet having learned the importance of frugality, coupled with the natural generosity of their nature, the Irish did not at first rise rapidly in the business world, although many entered trades, city departments and contracting. Irish women often engaged in domestic service or worked in the mills of New England. Recent years have brought a marked change in the condition of the Americans of Irish lineage, due to the influences of education and enlightenment. Irish wit finds vent from those Irishmen who practice law, and the Irish judge is the rule rather than the ex-

ception in New York City. The business world, too, is claiming an increasing number of Irish.

The next great wave that affected American life was the German. It was shown in the previous chapters that the Germans continually contributed to our population from an early period, but it was not until after the coming of the Irish wave that the German flood rapidly surged to tremendous proportions. The peak of this tide was reached as early as 1882, but the falling off thereafter was very gradual. Before 1870 the reactionary policies of the Kaiser and his clique had sent some of the best blood of the German people to the United States, for which reason the German immigrant stock of the early period gave some great characters to American public life. Obviously the majority of the early Germans hailed from other than the distinctly Prussian regions of Germany.

After the year 1870, however, the motives for leaving the Fatherland were, as a general rule, economic, as a result of which the greater number of the German immigrants of the modern period came from humble circumstances. They were recruited largely from the Rhine Provinces. As for the pro-German element in this country, it seems safe to say that it belonged to the very newest of the German immigration population in this country, it being by a strange paradox the least German in blood of all our German fellow-citizens; for most of these pro-Germans, fortunately not numerous enough to be a great menace, originally came from those districts of East or West Prussia, where the lower classes are of Old Prussian or even Slavic descent. Of course the upper classes of Prussia are descendend from the conquering Teutonic knights, and are therefore of pure Germanic blood; but, as I have said, most of our recent German immigrants were not of the well-to-do land-owning type.



CASTLE GARDEN, NEW YORK CITY  
Where Great Multitudes of Immigrants Landed During the Nineteenth Century



There have been only 1,023,000 German immigrants to the United States since 1890, but among these were some less desirable individuals from Prussia, Austria and Bavaria, that were hardly to be found in the earlier German influx. The great majority of our people of German birth and immediate ancestry have a background either of American birth or of thirty or more years of residence. The vast Pan-German propaganda for twenty years before the World War had very little effect, in general, except upon the very recent immigrants who had not yet become imbued with the American spirit or ideals. Indeed pro-German agitators are still vainly seeking to disturb the peace in America by appealing to Germans very lately arrived.

It must not be understood, however, that the German immigrants have always sought community centres, for such is far from being the case. In fact they have been very widely distributed over the country. German-born persons outnumber the other foreigners in all except the New England and a few mountain States. They have in general proved a sturdy, law-abiding set in such States as Minnesota, Wisconsin, Iowa, North Dakota, or Missouri, as well as in such cities as Chicago, St. Louis and Baltimore, in which latter place the Catholic Germans are in goodly numbers, and in New York, where the German-born nearly equal the Irish-born. Even in the South we find communities founded in comparatively recent years, such as, for instance that to be found in the region of Kuhlman, Alabama. The Mennonites settled in Kansas late in the last century.

In the German influx of the modern period we may include some of the immigrants from Austria, Switzerland and, in recent years, some few from Hungary. The Swiss of the Red River (North) were, as we have previously mentioned, among the first pioneers of Minne-

sota. Today we find some of them in the Far West, where they are making a living in the rich land behind the Rocky Mountain coast range.

During the decade following the Civil War, the Scandinavians began to emigrate to the United States in gradually increasing numbers, and this influx continued important to the year 1920. In neither the Swedes, Norwegians nor Danes is the fraternal or co-operative spirit very strong, which has led to the quick merging of their children with the American population. In fact it is claimed that there are few if any exceptions to the rule that the second generation of Scandinavians are always American, in thought and in ideals. For the most part our immigrants from Scandinavia have not been recruited from the upper classes of that country, yet they form a markedly literate category. Few Scandinavian men choose indoor occupations, unless we include the well known Swedish janitor of the city, but the women have entered housework in considerable numbers. In New England the Norwegians particularly are numerous in the fisheries and in shipping.

The Scandinavian element of the modern period is to a great extent concentrated in a few States in the North Central West. Illinois, Wisconsin, Minnesota, Iowa and the Dakotas have all received strong Scandinavian immigrant contributions, even in recent years. Also there are considerable numbers of Scandinavians and their children in New England. One of the finest agricultural colonies founded by foreigners in the United States is that of New Sweden in Maine; a community first established in 1870 by a company of fifty-one Swedes brought over to northern Maine by the Hon. W. W. Thomas, who had been a United States consul to Sweden during the Civil War in America. Incidentally, we may also mention the sturdy blond Icelanders who form a society



in the Red River Valley.<sup>89</sup> Still other Icelanders are to be found in North Dakota and Washington, as well as Minnesota. Scandinavians are numerous in the States of New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania, while at the other end of the continent we find that some of them have crossed the Rocky Mountains.

The English, Welsh and Scotch immigrants of the modern period, of whom we have already spoken, approach nearest to the native American in their social customs and standards, and are thus easily assimilated into the American body politic. Although it is doubtless true that many Englishmen and Scotsmen fail to seek naturalization as eagerly as some other nationalities, due in the main to their deep pride in the British Empire, it can hardly be said that they are a menace to our institutions from this fact.

Along with the English and Scotch immigration, and in certain respects partly of it, are the immigrants from Upper (English) Canada. No less an authority than Sir Richard Cartwright thinks that, "between 1866 and 1896 one-third at least of the whole male adult population of Canada between the ages of twenty and forty found their way to the United States," and that this "included an immense percentage of the most intelligent and adventurous." The movement of aliens from this particular part of British North America (and also including Newfoundland) was almost wholly composed of persons of Northern and Western European descent or birth. In fact a considerable part of these latter were newly arrived in Canada from the British Isles and the Continent.

In the previous chapter we briefly reviewed the British immigration into Canada. (See note 74.) We showed that Canada seemed to attract the Scotch for permanent settlement, even more than any other British dominion or colony. The permanence of the Scotch immigration

to Canada, is manifest from the distinctly Scotch atmosphere in many parts of the Dominion. It is undeniable that the wooded lakes and glens of Canada, so much like their home land, has always attracted and retained not only the Highland Scots, but also the Scotch of the Lowlands and the Ulster Scotch. The presence of some Highland Scottish regiments from Canada during the World War is an indication of this phenomenon. Hence we are not to judge that the some 50,000 Anglo-American Royalists who entered Canada after the Revolution were alone in their influence on Canadian life. But the tendency of the Scotch to abide in Canada strengthens the belief that they were not attracted to the United States in over-proportionate numbers. Moreover, it is significant that during the decades from 1860 to 1910, the English immigrants to Canada were anywhere from four to eight times as numerous as the Scotch, Welsh, and Scotch-Irish, and that it was during this particular period, as Sir Richard Cartwright points out, that Canada gave such mighty contributions to the population of the United States. (See Appendix I, Table VI.) We also saw in the previous chapter that there were Scandinavians (Icelanders) in Canada almost from the beginning of white settlement, and in the years afterward other Scandinavians, and many Mennonites and other Germans, settled in Upper Canada. Thus it is not to be doubted that there were Germans and Scandinavians in the throng that passed from Canada into the United States, not to mention certain other nationalities that had first immigrated to Canada and subsequently moved to the Republic. But the greatest loss to British North America has been the vast number of Canadians of British ancestry who find the opportunities of the United States too much for their love of country. In the decade 1911-1920 no less than 742,185 immigrant aliens passed

from Canada into the United States, in addition to thousands of "non-immigrant" aliens who eventually remained in the States. Indeed Dr. Peter H. Bryce, recent Medical Superintendent for the Federal Department of Immigration for Canada, is reported by The "Globe" of Toronto to have said that Canada had lost in the ten years ending in 1920 one million of the two and a half million immigrants to Canada in the past twenty years.

Between March 31, 1914 and March 31, 1919, alone, Canada has suffered a net loss of at least 330,000 immigrants to the United States. This drag to the southern neighbor has always been the bane of Canada's existence. Even in the boom year when 116,000 persons came from the States into the farming country of Canada, the net gain to the Dominion was less than 22,000! Canada, in fact, has learned to attract population, but has not learned to keep it. And it seems highly probable that this condition may be appreciably aggravated by the awakening of Alaska, land of vast and undeveloped resources.<sup>90</sup> Not including those persons who cross the border temporarily in either direction, the balance of immigration between the United States and Canada was at least 216,000 in our favor during the eleven years just previous to 1920; the great majority of which came from other than French Canada. In very recent years, alien arrivals from Canada to this country have included a very limited number of the trans-oceanic class; and peoples of Southern and Eastern European stock were almost negligible.

Moreover, the substantial part of the emigration from the United States into Canada goes from our Northwestern States, where the Germans and Scandinavians are very strong; and it is therefore very possible that the French-Canadian element which has entered the United States in considerable bulk is at least partly offset

by the German, Scandinavian and non-Anglo-Saxon stocks that reach Canada from our land. In this light it is not particularly significant that in the movement of United States citizens to and from Canada during the past ten years the balance is in favor of the latter country to the number of 195,000.

For want of actual data, we must infer that these American citizens and naturalized citizens, many of whom eventually returned to the United States, were ethnically divided according to the ratio of each ancestral element in the population of the United States. In other words, if these emigrants had been saved to the United States, each ancestral element (white) would have been augmented about two-tenths of one per cent.

The great majority of our French-speaking immigrants have come from Lower Canada. They were first attracted by the New England cotton mills. With the exception of some agricultural colonies in certain parts of the West, they have not pushed very far to the south. In the past these French Canucks have proven very clanish, even going so far as to bring their priest and parish with them and literally to transport bits of Quebec into New England. However, they now show some signs of giving up their religious bigotry and exclusiveness. Important French colonies are to be found in San Francisco, New York and other large cities.

In marked contrast to the important immigration from British North America, the contribution of Australia and New Zealand combined during a period of twenty years has been less than 22,000; practically all of whom were, of course, of British stock.

And it might be mentioned, in passing, that in southwest Wisconsin are to be found numbers of Cornish, those Englishmen who are so closely akin to the Welsh, seen in the fact that their ancient tongue, now irrevocably lost, was but a dialect of Cymric.

The Dutch and Flemish, like the immigrants from France, have entered the United States in augmented numbers quite recently. The Dutch stock, which is perhaps most closely allied in blood to the English of all the Continental nationalities, needs no introduction to the American people. As pointed out in a previous chapter, the Dutch were very numerous in the Colonial period. Since the first year of recorded immigration they have shown a steady, though small immigration stream. Many entered Michigan and other States of the Middle West. There is no record of immigration from Belgium before the year 1894, however; although to-day thousands of Belgians (many of them speaking a joint Flemish-Walloon dialect) are settled in Wisconsin; while other Belgians are found in the floral nurseries of California, having been trained in their home land for that class of work.

According to the 1910 Census, persons born in Great Britain and English Canada together showed the highest total ever reported for them; while the number of Irish-born in 1910 had declined more than half a million, or 28 per cent from the 1890 Census Report. In 1910 the German-born showed, for the first time, a decrease over the previous decade, amounting to 12 per cent. In 1910 Britons and English Canadians exceeded the Irish in forty-two States, and of the second generations the former were more numerous in thirty-two States. In 1850 the Irish-born were nearly double the German-born, but since 1880 the German-born have greatly outnumbered the Irish. Females have outnumbered the males among the Irish-born, while the opposite is true of the British- and German-born.

In New England, the Middle Atlantic and the East North Central States 72.2 per cent of British- and English Canadian-born, 83.5 per cent of the Irish-born, 91



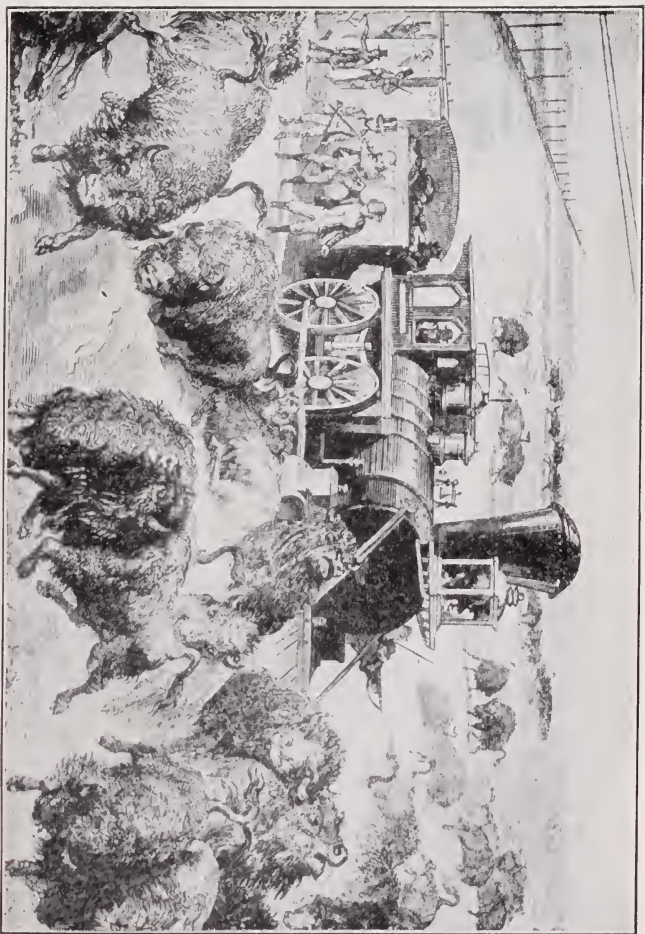
per cent of the French Canadian-born and 69.8 per cent of the German-born, were concentrated. In the same States were concentrated 65 per cent of natives of British parentage, 79 per cent of those of Irish parentage and 66 per cent of those of German parentage; showing that there was far less tendency of the modern "old" immigrant stock to seek the Western country than was the case with their predecessors of the Colonial and early immigrant periods. It may be noted, in passing, that the comparatively large Scottish immigration of the modern period was concentrated in the Eastern States.

One outstanding feature of our immigration from Northwest Europe and British North America (in marked contrast to that from Southern and Eastern Europe, which will be taken up in the following chapter) is that a comparatively far less number of the immigrants of that source have, in the past, returned to the country of their origin, while, also, a great majority eventually assume the duties of citizenship.

Following are the fairly approximate figures for the number of persons of our "old" immigrant stock of the modern period, according to ancestral origin, in the year 1920:<sup>91</sup>

English .....	4,075,302
Scotch, Scotch-Irish, Welsh .....	1,929,663
Irish (Celtic) .....	4,605,463
German, Swiss, Austrian .....	9,166,055
Scandinavian, Icelandic .....	3,284,354
Dutch, Frisian, Flemish .....	460,572
French, French-Canadian, Walloon, Breton.....	1,525,553
Total .....	25,046,962





THE FAR WEST PENETRATED BY THE FIRST RAILROAD



## CHAPTER IV

### THE "NEW" IMMIGRANT STOCK

Twoscore years before the ending of the World War, an invading host, none the less a potential menace because of its ostensibly peaceful character, began to crowd the gates of America.

This tide of newcomers to our shore surged through the places of entry in our inadequate dikes, in great waves that were only restrained from swamping the country by the fact that a constant ebb-tide somewhat diminished the full force of this gigantic inflow of humanity. Moreover, the incoming tide was increasing apace, and was being relieved less and less, in a proportional sense, by the outward flow.

Unfortunately, in considering the nationalities mentioned in this chapter, it is impossible to differentiate between the gold and the dross. One may safely say, however, that the bulk of our immigration of the modern period from Southern and Eastern Europe is made up of aliens distinctly inferior to the native American in hereditary quality, standard of living and social customs, as well as in physical attributes. Undoubtedly all the nationalities now to be enumerated have made magnificent contributions to the welfare of the world—but it was the comparatively homogeneous and generally most finished products of these nationalities that accomplished so much; not the mongrelized, submerged creatures (masquerading under names of Aryan or Semite) whom the nations of Europe are only too willing to be rid of.

Closely following upon the era of the Homestead Act, there came an industrial period lasting down to the present day. This circumstance brought high wages which, with the gregarious nature of man, led to a concentration of less hardy and resourceful humanity in the great cities and industrial communities of the East. The steamship companies and great corporations began to stimulate immigration in order to benefit by the lower wages that could be offered to aliens from Southern and Eastern Europe, whose standard of living was so far below that of the American workman. As a result, today every town of industrial importance in the territory east of the Mississippi and north of the Ohio and Potomac Rivers has its quota composed of Slavs, Magyars, North and South Italians, or other races of the "new" immigration. If a line be drawn from the industrial region of New England to the northwestern corner of Minnesota, thence to the southwestern corner of Illinois, from thence to the Jersey seaboard and back up the coast (a territory which includes most of the great manufacturing cities as well as the mining and industrial districts), it would bound an area within which practically all of our population of the "new" immigration is included.<sup>92</sup> The same state of affairs on a smaller scale exists in the mining sections of the West. In the bituminous coal mining territory of West Virginia, Virginia, Alabama, Arkansas and Oklahoma, immigrant colonies like those in the coal mining regions of Pennsylvania and the middle West, have come into existence. Southern and Eastern Europeans are even to be found in the iron and steel producing communities of the Birmingham district in Alabama. However, so intense is the race prejudice on the part of the native wage-earners in the South that only recently have the immigrants commenced to go there in any numbers, except in the case of several

agricultural bodies located principally in the Mississippi Valley. In the past the cotton mill workers, recruited from isolated farm and mountain districts, refused to work with recent immigrants.

In fact, wherever there has been industrial activity—in the coal mines of Kansas and Oklahoma, the iron-ore mines of the Mesabi and Vermilion ranges of Minnesota, the furnaces and mills of Pueblo, Colorado, the packing houses of Kansas City, South Omaha and Fort Worth, the iron mines of Northern Michigan, the copper mines of Tennessee, the coal mines of Virginia, and in the mines and mills of the Eastern States—the Southern and Eastern Europeans have lodged themselves among the laborers. It is interesting to note that any one of the various elements of foreign stock of the "new" immigration is found to dwell in one densely populated area, from which radiate districts of gradually decreasing density. These conditions are paralleled in a smaller way in certain urban centers, such as New York or Detroit and Wayne County, or in such mining and industrial districts as the Mahoning Valley, Northern Michigan, Lackawanna Valley and certain areas of Pennsylvania, Ohio, West Virginia and Indiana. In general, however, the new immigration is not filling up our far Western States.

The Southern European, or Graeco-Latin group in our population is represented by the Italians, Spanish, Portuguese, white Mexicans, other Latin Americans, Provençals, Rumanians, other Latins and Greeks. Of these the South Italians form the only very heavy stream of arrivals. It is surprising that so few white immigrants come from the West Indies and South America (and even these include a comparatively large number of British and others).

In the case of the Italians, the physical difference be-



tween the people from the South of Italy (whose type bears witness to countless invasions by Saracen, North African and Greek, not to mention other ancient peoples) and those from the North, who are at least partly Teutonic in type, is so pronounced that the Immigration Bureau has seen fit to divide this nationality for the purposes of classification. It would be well to remember this when we come to take up the subject of racial composition in a later chapter.

About 4,000,000 Italians have come to this country since 1882, when these swarthy foreigners first began to enter in considerable numbers. Yet the actual number of Italians and their children in the United States today is far below that total. This is due to the fact that the Italian immigrants have been primarily "birds of passage" in past years. They have taken advantage of the inducements of steamship companies to come over and stay anywhere from a few months to a period of years, but two-fifths of them, on the average, have returned to the land of their birth. In fact this ratio was tremendously increased during, and for a while after the World War. Possibly a cold climate here in the United States has had its effect in causing so many Italians to return to Italy. It would seem that a heavy infant mortality, which partly offsets the large families of Italian women, may be attributed, at least in part, to our cold winters; seeming to prove that those of Latin blood thrive little better outside their habitat than do those of Northern blood in a tropical clime. At any rate, "Sunny Italy" always beckons to her children, and hitherto it was the ambition of most Italians to make enough money in America so that upon their return to the land of their birth they might go into business for themselves, or else retire and pass their last years in comparative ease and comfort.



"After 1880 the pioneer contingents of Ligurians, Genoese and Palermitans began to be replaced by the later hordes of Sicilians, Calabrians and Neapolitans.

"Four-fifths of the Italians now live in urban communities. In 1910 Italians exceeded in numbers all other foreigners in the city of New Orleans, besides making up a great part of the city of New York."<sup>93</sup>

Italians have built up communities in the cigar manufacturing cities of Tampa and Key West, Florida. Sections of South Italians abound in the region east of the Mississippi and north of the Ohio. A few are engaged in fruit raising in southern California. Also they exist on the swamps of New Jersey. An experiment in farming on the part of Italians led to the thriving Italian community of East Vineland, New Jersey. Started by street sweepers and ragpickers from New York City, in 1885, East Vineland, or "New Italy," as it is called, has grown into a thriving district with a population for miles around purely Italian. It has two Italian Catholic churches, good public schools, but no industries other than farming and fruit raising. However, this community is the exception that proves the rule, that Italians in general do not seek the farm lands. Some Italians drift periodically as far as the mining regions of the Rockies.

The Greeks, like the Italians, have always been "birds of passage," but now, also like the Italians, they are coming to remain here permanently in greater numbers. It used to be a general rule that there was only about one woman to twenty-five men within the Greek immigrant community. Now, however, the women are coming in very noticeable numbers, many of them being "picture brides" who have never seen their prospective husbands.

Greeks are numerous in such centers as Stamford and Bridgeport, Connecticut, and Holyoke and Fall River, Massachusetts, the Chicago stockyards, the smaller cities

of the Middle West, and Fresno, California. Tarpon Springs, Florida, is a Greek town transported to a bayou amidst the semi-tropical scenery of that State, from whence the picturesque craft, with their lateen sails of many colors, start out on their sponging trips.

The Portuguese have, strangely enough, settled the two extremes of our continent. Thus many of them have established themselves on Cape Cod in New England or have manned the whalers and other vessels out of New Bedford or are weavers and factory workers; while, on the other hand, others of them are engaged in tending the vineyards of southern California. Some of the so-called Portuguese are in reality Negroid "Bravas" from Portugal's island possessions in the Atlantic.

The Spaniards went mostly to the Middle West and the coal mines of Pennsylvania and West Virginia, but they are also to be found in some numbers in the factories of Newark and Bridgeport, and have vied with the Cubans and South Italians in building up colonies in the cigar manufacturing cities of Tampa and Key West, Florida. In New York State colonies of these Spaniards worked upon the aqueducts or other public utilities as laborers, living in communities all to themselves.

We may take the Basques (who are included with the Spaniards in the Census figures) as a typical example of the tendency of certain Southern and Eastern Europeans to return to the lands of their origin after a more or less extended sojourn in the United States. With the Basques, because of their comparatively small and isolated country in Europe, this tendency is what almost amounts to a regular system. At about the age of seventeen many of the young men of this numerically small people will depart for California, Wyoming, New Mexico, Oregon or Utah. Within a dozen or so years of sheep raising they return with comparatively comfort-

able means, and set up adequate homes for themselves. Whenever one returns, another leaves for the Western land to take his place.

The largest Rumanian communities in the United States are in the cities of Youngstown and Cleveland, Ohio, where they share in the life of these industrial centers.

The Eastern European group in our populace includes the Slavs (Poles, Czecho-Slovaks, Jugoslavs, Russians and Bulgars); the Finno-Ugrians (Magyars and Finns); the Letto-Lithuanians; and the Albanians. While the three last named divisions are distinguished by a lingual variation from the Slavic tongues, they are at least partly Slavic in blood, particularly in the case of the lower classes that come to us in the modern period. The Finno-Ugrian tongues are of Asiatic origin (see Introduction), but the others, in spite of their diverse racial origin, speak Aryan languages.

The Slav and kindred peoples have only been in America a relatively short time, but the American people are now beginning to wonder what is to be the effect on our body politic of this vast undigested group which clings to its foreign language newspaper, brings up its children in schools using an alien tongue, and contributes little to American life outside of its brawn. Even the earlier settlements of Bohemians in Texas, or Poles in Wisconsin, or traders of the latter nationality along the Mexican border, are loath to forsake their alien character and customs, although surrounded by staunchly American populations.

As we have already shown, the Slavs and closely allied peoples tend to congregate in the industrial districts east of the Mississippi. However, some Slavs, Magyars and Finns drift periodically as far as the Rocky Mountain mining regions, or even to southern California. Some

of the abandoned New England farms are being worked by Poles. One of the most flourishing Yugoslav settlements in the United States is in Pueblo, Colorado, most of the men being employed in the steel works. Other Yugoslavs are engaged in tuna fishing off the California coast or are fruit-growers in that State.

Small colonies of Albanians are found in Miles, Massillon, Akron and Canton, Ohio; Hudson, Lynn, Taunton, Webster and Springfield, Massachusetts; Pittsburgh, Braddock and Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; Waterbury and Bridgeport, Connecticut; New York, Albany and Jamestown, New York; Detroit and Pontiac, Michigan; Chicago and Argo, Illinois; St. Louis; Milwaukee; Atlantic City; Toronto; and Gary, Indiana.

There is a large colony of Russians in one section of Los Angeles, who cling tenaciously to their alien customs. Others are scattered through the Southwest and Far West and New York, Illinois and Pennsylvania.

The Letts (who are counted with the Lithuanians, their near kindred, in the statistics of the Census and Immigration Bureaus) are to be found for the most part in New York, Chicago, Buffalo, Boston, Philadelphia and other large cities, where they maintain lingual communities.

The Esths are in general farmers in the West and Northwest, or seamen on American merchant ships.

In the past the Slavs have not been, perhaps, quite as transient as the Italians, for instance; but nevertheless, particularly in the case of the Poles and Bohemians, they likewise are to a great extent "birds of passage." Also, like the Italians and Greeks, the Slavs, Magyars and Finns have in the past been chiefly composed of the male sex, although the latter nationality also included a considerable number of female domestics.

The last group of the "new" immigration includes the



CROSSING THE COLORADO DESERT





Semites and their close kin, the Armenians. Lingually, however, the latter belong to the Iranian branch of the Aryan family of languages. The kinship between these two nations of traders will be discussed at greater length in a later chapter.

A vast change has been gradually brought about in the character and physical type of our Jewish immigrants of the modern period. In other words, there are vast and undeniable gulfs between the Sephardim Jews of Western Europe (who made up the bulk of our Jewish immigration of the early period) and the submerged classes among the Ashkenazim Jews of Russia, Poland and Eastern Europe, who are obviously of mixed racial type—explained by their descent, in part, from the proselytized Khazars, of Mongolian origin. To compare the purely Jewish types with the horde of so-called Jews now pouring into America, is a farce of the first magnitude. Hence we must regard the Ashkenazim Jews as being, in the main, a distinct type from their co-religionists from Germany and Western Europe.

In fact, the time has come for Americans in general, whether Jew or Gentile, to realize that there are quite as vast depths between the various worshippers of Judaism as there are among those who profess faith in Christianity. There are brown Christians in India and Malaysia; but there are brown Jews in India. Likewise the Christians of Eastern Europe are oftentimes descended from Mongolians who made inroads into Europe, and so the great masses of the ghettos are in turn of part Mongol strain. As I have previously inferred, it is impossible to divide the figures for Jewish immigrants between the pure Jewish types of the Jewish gentle folk from Russia and the uncouth product of the Pale; but it is obvious that the latter by far predominate among our latter-day Jewish immigrants.

The Semitic community is primarily city-dwelling. There were probably in 1920 not more than 50,000 Jewish farmers in the United States, not only, perhaps, because the dwarfed physique of the Russian or Polish Jew does not fit him for this occupation, but also because the Jew of Eastern Europe has been forced by discrimination to turn to intellectual pursuits.

Almost one-half of the Jews in the United States dwell in a circle radiating only to a short distance without New York City. Practically the entire number of Jews in the country are included within the four cities of New York, Chicago, Philadelphia and Cleveland, with their surroundings. Even the comparatively few scattered Jewish communities, whether in city or country districts, are in touch with organizations which promote the continuance of Jewish thought and religious training.

Out of the Near East come our Syrian immigrants, most of whom are Christian in faith, in spite of the fact that Syria itself is three-fourths Moslem. Some of them belong to the orthodox Greek church, left by the receding Byzantine power of by-gone centuries; some are Catholics, dating from the period of the Crusades; while a few are Protestant, from the recent wave of missionaries. Most of the Syrians are in their own quarters in New York or other Eastern cities. Syrian small merchants and peddlers are also found scattered about the Rio Grande Valley.

The number of our Armenian immigrants is increasing very rapidly, this being particularly true of those of the female sex. While the Armenians are generally inclined to settle in New York and other cities as traders, it is also true that there is a large colony of them in the San Joachim Valley engaged mostly in farming pursuits and other work.

As a means of comprehending the character of our

"new" immigrant element of the modern period, and in order to justify our estimate of their total numbers in 1920, we must consider special features regarding their birth rate, as well as certain correlated matters.

In the first place, it must be understood that the natural rate of increase of the "new" immigrant element, in the past, has by no means been in keeping with the admittedly high birth rate, except possibly in the case of the Jews.<sup>94</sup> From a past viewpoint, the proportion of women has been less than one in four among the combined numbers of the "new" immigration. The Balkan States at one time sent only one woman to twenty-five men, and the same ratio prevailed among the Greeks. The immigrants who brought women with them usually stayed in the country, while as a general rule the bachelors returned to the land from whence they had come. On the other hand, there was practically no return emigration of Jews, and the latter brought their family with them in nearly all cases.

As far as the Latins and Slavs and kindred peoples are concerned, it is most difficult to determine the true value of immigration figures concerning them. For instance, many Italian immigrants are known to have come on as many as five or six different trips to the United States, and it is not at all unlikely that even in one decade many of the immigrants, Latin, Greek or Slav, have actually been counted twice or a half dozen times, in the immigration records. Moreover, is it not significant that of the some 18,000 "native-born citizens" and 2,600 "naturalized citizens" who departed just during the fiscal year 1920 to reside in Europe, about half the former and over a third the latter were destined for Italy, and a large part of the remainder left for Slav and Magyar territory? From all this it may be supposed that many American citizens return to Italy and the Slavic countries after they have amassed a certain amount of wealth.

Another factor is contained in the assertion that although the immigrants were prolific in their birth rate, their life among the city tenements brought about a prodigious death rate. In fact, only the fit could have survived the squalor, poverty, disease and hunger that was undergone by a vast number of tenement dwellers. However, the increasing prevalence of welfare work, as we shall point out in a later chapter, is destined to save more and more of these Southern and Eastern Europeans who might otherwise die in infancy or childhood.

Long established custom and the comparative scarcity of women among the Latin and Slavic immigrants has inevitably led to early marriage for the women. Now it is true that early marriages produce more children than later; but, on the other hand, the children of too early marriages (such as often prevail among the newer immigrant element) are apt to be of poor quality, either from prenatal influences or from lack of care on the part of the mother after birth. The same holds true for ignorant mothers of any age. It is safe to say that many of the 20,000 children killed by accidents alone in a year, (according to a Red Cross tabulation) lost their lives because of lack of care and vigilance on the part of alien mothers.

It is significant also that, "in the second and third generation . . . many of the Slavs desire the concentration of advantages, and consequently their birth rate is falling and their standard of living is rising."<sup>95</sup> And then again, "The Italian woman immigrant and the Italian woman of the first generation marries very young and bears many children, but the Italian woman of the second generation . . . will marry later . . . bear fewer children."<sup>96</sup>

The fact that the proportion of children among arriving Jewish immigrants (theirs being a "family immigration") is twice as large as for all other immigrants, indi-

cates that a large part of the Jewish immigrants are reared, for some years before their maturity, among city surroundings and within the public school. In this circumstance they seek economic advantages and will correspondingly limit their birth rate when they marry.

In the case of the Jew, as well as of the Slav and the Italian, the woman of the immigrant generation is exceptionally prolific,—irrespective of the actual rate of increase,—but the second generation tends to conform to the American average in the number of children.

This is partly due to the fact that the natural rate of increase in the large city, with respect to any particular stock, is much less than that in the country districts.<sup>97</sup> Thus when the Jewish woman, or the Italian woman, or the Slavic woman, either of the first or second generation, but more particularly of the latter, begins to experience the joy of comparative luxury, she refuses to bear children in the same proportion as did her mother, and emulates the native birth rate in the great city. The birth rate of the Polish Jew is very high, but it would seem likely that the second generation is conforming to the average of fecundity of other city-dwelling populations. Hence, while the native birth rate in America is somewhat retarded by the lack of fecundity of the city folk, on the other hand the prolific immigrant population is also being affected by this phenomenon. In fact the menace of an untoward increase of our population of alien origin lies not in the eventual increase of those already here, but in the continued arrival in great numbers of first generations of immigrants, who could swamp the native stock with their prolific birth rate. Study of Census reports seems to prove this.

Lastly, in this connection, we must take into account the staggering proportions of fatalities suffered by the some eight millions or more persons past the age of ten



in the United States who cannot read any language, or who cannot read or speak the English tongue. Of course many of the latter are Negroes and poor native whites; but a report of the Bureau of Mines, Department of the Interior, calls attention to the fact that in Pennsylvania's anthracite mines the 57 per cent of non-English-speaking foreigners accounted for 71 per cent of the fatalities; and that a similar condition prevailed in the bituminous mines of Pennsylvania and West Virginia. What is more, in the lead industry, for instance, practically all who are incapacitated or die from lead poisoning are foreigners, owing to the fact that they cannot be taught the necessity of hygienic habits. It has been estimated that over two and a half times as many civilians (the great majority of them probably foreigners) perished accidentally in the course of industrial activities during the period of the war, as the 50,000 soldiers killed in actual combat.

From all of which it may be assumed that the rate of increase of the "new" immigrant stock did no more than keep pace, on the average, with the other white elements of our population in the decade from 1910 to 1920.<sup>98</sup>

The 1910 Census of Foreign Stocks will prove of inestimable value to future statisticians; not only because it creates a precedent for future tabulation, but because it coincides, in so far as the "new" immigrant element is concerned, with practically the entire number for two generations.<sup>99</sup> It thus makes it possible to record approximately the amount of Latin, Slavic or Semitic blood in our population in 1910 originating from the influx from Southern and Eastern Europe since the year 1850, or at least 1870. Of course a certain number of grandchildren of Jewish and perhaps Italian immigrants of the early period were enumerated as "native white of native parents" in the Census of 1910. On the other hand, older immigrants, in the case of Latins and Slavs,



are replaced in the succeeding Census reports by the comparatively youthful laborer and his children, in turn replaced by still other newcomers.

Thus it may be determined from the foregoing that the 1910 Census will be proved to be far more important in some respects than even the report on the 1920 Census of Foreign Stocks, which will not be announced until at least late in the year 1923.<sup>100</sup> As a matter of fact, when the 1920 Report is published, the foreign-born will have been drawn upon by emigration as well as by the natural death rate, while the third generation will have passed under the head of "native white of native parents" and hence be not included in the 1920 Foreign Census at all.

Following is a reasonably close estimate of the growth of the "new" immigrant stock since the 1910 Census, from natural increase and net immigration combined:<sup>101</sup>

#### LATIN (EXCEPT FRENCH) AND GREEK:

Italian (North and South), Romansch, Friulian .....	2,900,436	
Spanish, Spanish American, Basque, Catalan .....	154,375	
Mexican (creole white only) .....	97,995	
Portuguese .....	213,134	
Rumanian .....	80,711	
Greek .....	270,243	3,716,894

#### SLAV, FINNO-UGRIAN, LETTO- LITHUANIAN, ALBANIAN:

Polish .....	2,178,295	
Czecho-Slovak .....	984,925	
Russian, Ukranian, Ruthenian (Little Russian) .....	324,042	
Jugoslav, Bulgar, other Slav (Wendish) ..	505,814	
Albanian .....	2,637	

Magyar .....	405,438	
Finnish, Esthonian, Lappish .....	267,850	
Lithuanian, Lett .....	309,177	4,978,178

## SEMITE AND ARMENIAN:

Jewish (mostly Ashkenazim) .....	2,857,124	
Syrian, Arab .....	82,055	
Armenian .....	59,443	2,998,522
<b>Total</b> .....		<hr/> 11,693,694

## CHAPTER V

### THE RACIAL FACTOR

The reader will have observed that so far nationality alone has been considered as the determining factor in arriving at the numerical strength of various elements that contribute to the white population of the United States. Indeed, by summing up the figures arrived at in the several previous chapters, we gain a fairly true estimate of the composition of the so-called white stock, according to ancestral origin. See table next page.<sup>102</sup>

But in thus giving so much thought to the question of nationality in the foregoing, there has been only one aim: to determine the *racial* composition of the people of the United States. Unfortunately, no general anthropometrical survey has ever been attempted, covering continental United States from coast to coast; so that we are wholly at a loss for adequate anthropological data in respect to the American people. Thus awaiting the day when the science of race has progressed further, we must fall back upon Census and immigration figures as the next best indication of the racial strata in our population; recognizing the fact that all European nationalities are generally regarded as being predominantly composed of at least one of the several great racial strains whose types are found throughout Europe at the present day.

When we come to define nationality, it is necessary to regard it as being far different from the true conception of race. It is a deplorable fact that many individuals

ANCESTRAL ELEMENT	Old White Stock: Descen- dants of settlers in the United States before 1790	An- nexed White Stock: Descen- dants of com- muni- ties joined to the United States after 1790	"Old" Immi- grant Stock (Early Period): Immi- grants who ar- rived after 1790 and before the decade of the "seven- ties" and their de- scendants	"Old" Immi- grant Stock (Modern Period): Immi- grants who ar- rived after about the middle of the nine- teenth century up to 1920, and their descen- dants	"New" Immi- grant Stock (Modern Period): Immi- grants from Southern and Eastern Europe and their descen- dants	TOTAL 1920
Northwestern European [80,984,319]						
English . . . . .	36,511,140	549,500	4,410,197	4,075,302		45,546,139†
Other Anglo-Saxon . . . . .	3,307,006	45,500	602,545	1,929,663		†5,884,714†
Irish . . . . .	849,096		3,079,032	4,605,463		†8,533,591†
German . . . . .	2,502,600	7,000	1,130,587	9,166,055		12,806,242
French . . . . .	268,136	966,000	408,926	1,525,553		3,168,615
Dutch, Flemish . . . . .	1,117,232		31,292	460,572		1,609,096
Scandinavian . . . . .	116,192		35,376	3,284,354		3,435,922
Eastern European [4,978,178]						
Slav . . . . .					3,993,076	3,993,076‡
Letto-Lithuanian . . . . .					309,177	309,177‡
Finno-Ugrian . . . . .					673,288	673,288‡
Albanian . . . . .					2,637	2,637‡
Southern European [3,993,894]						
Latin(except French) . . . . .		245,000	32,000		3,446,651	3,723,651‡
Greek . . . . .					270,243	270,243‡
Semite, etc. [3,391,498]						
Jewish . . . . .	17,876		375,000		2,857,124	3,250,000
Syrian, Arab . . . . .					82,055	82,055‡
Armenian . . . . .					59,443	59,443‡
Unknown* . . . . .					323,729a	323,729a

\*See Note 114. (Mostly from Germany.)

‡A temporary population in part.

†"It has been said that the Irish question is as much an American as a British affair, since the United States has 14,000,000 people of Irish blood, while only 4,500,000 Irish are in Ireland." (Portland *Oregonian*, quoted in the *Literary Digest*, Dec. 17, 1921.)

†Possibly underestimated.

‡Possibly overestimated.

a Includes 41 given as "colored" in preliminary census report and later corrected. See footnote of table at end of Chapter VI.

look upon their own nationality with a false assumption of race; in spite of the fact that the science of anthropology has come definitely to assume that where racial variation is found, it is measured only according to the comparative proportion of the bloods of the main biological stocks. From a genuine racial standpoint, the proportion of each nationality in the composition of our population would be more or less irrelevant, were it not for the fact that we may consider the various ancestral stocks to be composed of varying degrees of admixture or fusion of the great race stocks.<sup>103</sup> In reality the national groups of Northwest Europe have no more significance racially than have the Sudanese, Nigritian or Bantu elements that together make up what is universally recognized as the Negro race.

It may be said that the Immigration Bureau, as a result of the consensus of opinion handed down by anthropologists throughout the United States, in reply to the Bureau's extended inquiry, has come to recognize four main racial groups among the white immigrants that come to our shores. These are the Nordic race (which fairly coincides with those people speaking Teutonic and Celtic tongues); the Mediterranean race (which in general incorporates people of Latin and Greek languages); the Alpine race (including the Slavs, Finno-Ugrians and, in part, the Letto-Lithuanians); and a fourth unclassified group which we may call for convenience the Assyroid (including Jews, Armenians, etc.) However, this categorical generalization must by no means be construed as an attempt to define the modern anthropological theories as entirely axiomatic, or even as a certain criterion of moral and intellectual value. Because racial theories of the long past have been discarded by scientists is no reason for falling into a superficial definition of race. Anthropology is still in its in-

fancy and is still to be regarded as a massive problem. Partly for that reason the writer, from his own far from mature conceptions, seeks to point out certain undeniable attributes of race and temperament which might be quite as apparent to the layman as to the best accredited expert in anthropology and biology. / As a matter of fact, the exigencies of this survey do not require lengthy delving into the latter subjects within these pages; there being countless other and more learned sources of information. The points brought out and adapted here merely serve to illustrate the problem from the standpoint of the individual American citizen who is interested in that which pertains to the welfare of his country.

There are so many differences between the characteristics of these great race stocks, most of them requiring scientific training to detect, that the present limited examination can mention only those that are apparent from casual observation, such as skin color, eye color, the character, color and distribution of hair on the body, stature and headform. Perhaps in most cases height and cephalic index are an indication of race, but this is not always true. For instance, the Scotch and Sudanese are both tall, and both are what is commonly known as long-headed.

Prevalence of a predominant physical type in a community determines the race and the mental capacity of its people. Or, in other words, the racial composition of a people corresponds, at least in part, to the anatomical characteristics of the individuals of that population.<sup>104</sup> It is therefore a fact that the United States, in spite of its accessions of numerous nationalities, is not necessarily more heterogeneous than any of the other great countries of the world; that is, from the true standpoint that considers only the presence of biological types. Often, to be sure, differences may be detected



between two nationalities of the same predominant strain, but these are generally concerned with peculiarities of clothing, dress of hair, cut of beard or moustache, facial expression or complexion, superimposed by climatic or economic environment. Thus it is certainly true that the further back the lineage of an American goes, the more difficult it becomes to determine the nationality of his first ancestor. But his racial type will persist notwithstanding.

The modern expert in heredity can come close to foretelling the color of hair or eyes that will pass to the children of given parents, merely from knowing the characteristics of the grandparents and other relatives. Moreover his calculations will show the character of mind or body that will appear, will probably appear, or may not appear, in the child.<sup>105</sup>

Countless invasions engraved the racial strains of our European ancestors; and yet it is true that certain race strains are still distinguishable without any question after centuries of admixture. To-day we find the Nordic race with, in general, a fair skin, tall stature, long face and skull, hair ranging from flaxen to shades of red and brown; and, above all, it is the only subspecies of mankind in the world that boasts of light eyes of blue, green or gray coloring. The Alpines are characterized by a round skull, medium height, stocky build, broad face, black, dark brown or chestnut hair, and the original color of the eyes is supposed to have been dark, although hazel grey eyes are quite prevalent in Russia and elsewhere. Whether the presence of hazel-grey eyes and chestnut hair denotes admixture of pre-Teutonic Nordics, perhaps, with the Alpines, has not been ascertained<sup>106</sup> The Mediterranean, or Iberian, type is distinguished by a swarthy skin, short stature, very dark or black eyes and hair, long skull, small headform and, as

compared to some other races, less robust bodily structure and physique. The Armenoid-Semitic, or Assyroid race, has mixed to a great extent with the Mediterranean in the Levant and has acquired many of the latter's physical characteristics. Perhaps the so-called "Jewish nose" is the most distinctive physical feature of the Assyroids.<sup>107</sup> There are, in addition, several minor and perhaps more ancient European strains which because of their obscurity we need not dwell upon at this juncture.

Nor is it now within our province to depict the growth of the great European races from prehistoric times up to the present. Suffice it to say that the primitive civilization of the ancient Mediterraneans depended for the most part on cheap manual labor, with only a few great thinkers and overseers. On the other hand, with all their potential qualities of achievement, the Nordics were compelled to remain in a latent state of culture until the period arrived when crude science made it possible to produce food adequately in a chill clime (unless, like the Goths, they migrated to warmer lands). Once the Nordics conquered nature in the North, however, they were able to rival and surpass the people of the Mediterranean basin. From this we are not to judge, however, that civilization of the future will depend on climate.<sup>108</sup>

To-day the Nordic race, in its purity, is grouped about the Baltic and North Seas; although it appears to have spread out in all directions, gradually losing its identity among the other great races. The Mediterranean race, as its name suggests, is to be found all about the shores of the Mediterranean Sea and extending even into Asia. The Alpine race is found throughout Central Europe, with ramifications into Asia. In France and in the valley of the Po, the Alpine race has become so thoroughly saturated with Nordic or Mediterranean blood that it

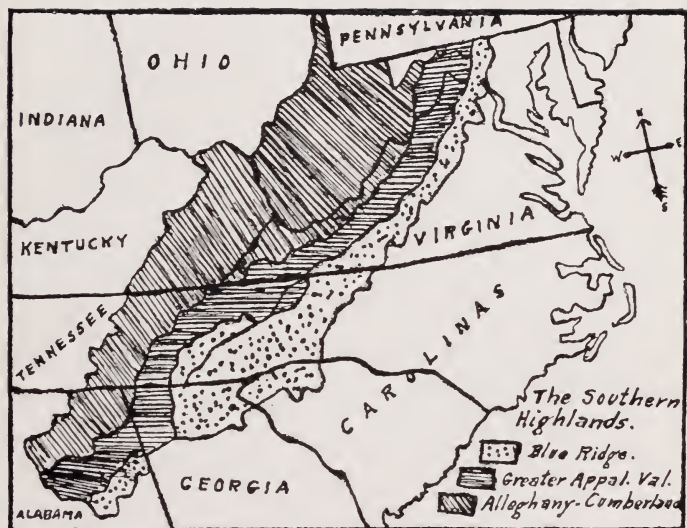
must be regarded as part of the latter races in those respective regions. But when we come to the Slavs, we find that the Alpine type is predominant. In general, the Assyroids are to be found in Eastern Europe, Germany and the Near East.

At some future day, doubtless, an anthropometrical survey of the American people, from the Atlantic to the Pacific coast, will be essayed.<sup>109</sup> Some such attempt has already been carried on by Dr. Hrdlicka on a smaller scale in a comprehensive examination of 1,000 and more Americans of the old white stock (with three generations on both paternal and maternal sides of the family). He observed that the inquiry seemed to show that, as one proceeds Northward from the Carolinas and Virginia, there is no increase in blondness, and that, in passing from New England southward, there is no change in the proportion or grade of pigmentation. It appeared that localized peculiarities of pigmentation were usually traceable to ancestry rather than environment. The practical absence of black hair was also noted.

Indeed, it does not need a searching anthropological examination to ascertain the obvious fact that a decided increase of fair types in the population is to be noted in journeying from the Atlantic seaboard to the Pacific Coast; this being accounted for by the fact that the West was populated by the best blood of the Nordic people of New England, and likewise the South and the East generally, before the coming of the later Alpine and Mediterranean elements who formed the densely populated alien centers in the industrial districts of the East. It was the tall, vigorous, blond long-headed individuals, lineal descendants of the Vikings, Athelings and Saxons, who furnished the emigrants from England, and who as pioneers and settlers populated the American seaboard and later conquered the West and the Far West, living

the free, open air existence that insured the preservation of the Nordic type. "In the Northwest, and in Alaska in the days of the gold rush, it was in the mining camps a matter of comment if a man turned up with dark eyes, so universal were gray and blue eyes among the American pioneers."<sup>110</sup>

American history has generally been set down in terms of nationality. Yet it must not be lost sight of that in the formation of our moral fibre, intellectual character and hereditary traits, which are, after all, the prerequisites of national progress, race has been the overwhelming factor. In other words, history should be generally treated as the social environment of mankind. For years the author has eagerly awaited the history of the American people that would ignore the subject of individuals, epochs and achievements alone; these being the effects rather than the causes, when we come to consider the multitudes of human souls who contributed to the destiny of the nation. It is the average of a community, not its greatest representatives that determines the character and achievement of a community. Eminence is not synonymous with ability. Who knows to what degree heritage and the human equation produced Washington, Lincoln and many an obscure and unsung hero? Even geography should be regarded essentially as the home of mankind. In his somewhat compact survey, the author has after a fashion followed along these lines. There are few social or economic topics under discussion to-day into which the question of race does not enter at least indirectly. Perhaps it is little realized how great has been the part played by the racial factor in the evolution of democracy and orderly government. Doubtless education and environment have their effect on the condition of individuals or even the general population. But they are not to be compared to heredity



The above diagram shows the region constituting the so-called Southern Highlands, where are to be found several million people of pure colonial stock, dwelling amidst the pioneer conditions of a century ago.





as a guiding force in the formation of national character, or in determining the destiny of mankind. For man makes the environment, not environment the man.

Within the American people the Nordic stock has always been most important in numbers and has composed the body politic of the nation since early Colonial days. It is comprised of the various elements among the early settlers and the later immigrants originating from Northwest Europe; including the English, Scotch-Irish and Scotch, Welsh, Highland Scots, Irish, Scandinavians, Dutch, Germans and the majority of our French and, to a lesser extent, our French Canadian immigrants.

A special word must be said of the last-named. They speak a patois derived from Normandy, related to the tongue of the proud Norman conquerors of Britain who were of the Norse strain. In other words, the blood of Nordic France runs through their veins in at least some measure. Yet how are we to account for the fact that the French Canadians do not display the same progressive character as the early Huguenot settlers in North America? It cannot be asserted that Catholicism reacts upon the population in a manner not possible in France, and that the capabilities of the people are restricted to any great extent. Therefore, we must turn to the racial history of the French Canadians to determine the reason for it all; and the more we study the subject the more it appears that the contrast between the Huguenots and the French Canucks can be attributed to the relative amount of Nordic blood in each. For the early Colonists in both the United States and Canada, men of initiative and the sea-going propensity, came from Normandy, French Flanders, and the fringe of Brittany seacoast, or, if they came from other districts,—as was the case with many of the Huguenots,—they were recruited from among the

gentry, who were preponderantly of Nordic blood. On the other hand, the later immigrants into French Canada were often sprung from the Alpine population of interior Brittany and central France, or the Iberian element of the Midi, and this influx had its effect in changing the character of the French people in Lower Canada.<sup>111</sup>

As regards our Anglo-Saxon stock, it is difficult to say whether the Englishman, Scotchman, Welshman or Irishman has the greater degree of Nordic blood in his veins. The London cockney (in part of the ancient Neolithic type); the "shanty" Irishman of the west coast of Ireland, whose type (Neanderthal) was discernible in certain individuals among the immigrants of the first great influx into America during the decade of the "forties", giving rise to the prevalent Irish caricature which erroneously survives; the dark small type of the Iberic Silurians found among the Welsh; or the so-called "black breed" of Scotland, descended from the probably Iberian Picts; all seem to be survivals of primitive folk. But, as far as the United States is concerned, such differentiation is more or less immaterial. Because practically all our "old stock" was derived from the Nordic districts of the British Isles, and this is true also of a majority of our later immigrants from the United Kingdom.

All the nationalities of Europe show at least a few traces of one or more of the great racial strains. Thus it might be said here that Nordic types are to be met with among the higher classes of North Italians, Poles, Magyars and Bohemians, from Germanic infusions; and among the gentry of the Catalans, Provençals and Gallegos, from the ancient pre-Nordic and Gothic invasions. In Lithuania, Latvia, Esthonia, the coast of Finland, and that part of Russia between Reval and Petrograd, the Nordic population is notably predominant in the better

classes. In Russia proper the Nordic type is perhaps purest in the governments of Novgorod, Pskov and Petrograd, and, to a lesser extent, in Tver. The total population of this region is hardly more than 8,000,000 today, however, which is pitifully small in comparison with the vast populations of the remainder of the Soviet Empire.<sup>112</sup> In White Russia and among the gentry of Poland the Nordic type is prominent. In other words, the Alpine race in the western part of the Russian Empire is saturated with Nordic blood, at least in part from the incursions of Varangian, Balt and German. Whether there was ever a distinct Russo-Nordic type is mere conjecture at the present day; although the presence of chestnut hair and hazel-gray eyes in Russia suggest the presence of a perhaps pre-Teutonic Nordic people in pre-historic times. Certainly the Slavic language, whatever its Aryan derivation, has been developed and expanded by Alpine and even Tartar. Incidentally, there is nothing to tell us that the dark eyes and black hair of the "dark and greasy" Ukrainians are not the original Alpine type, although it is apparent that the considerable amount of Tartar and other blood in Southern Russia must have affected the type of these people to at least some degree.

However, the amount of Nordic blood in the populations of the Slav countries is more or less irrelevant with respect to emigration from those countries to the United States. For it must be understood that the great bulk of our immigration from Southern and Eastern Europe is composed of the peasantry and laboring classes, among whom the amount of Nordic blood is practically negligible. And the same can be said in regard to our newcomers from the Latin nations. We do not receive many of the gentry of Lombardy, in whose veins flows the blood of Goth and Lombard, and even southern France has been generally drained of its noble Gothic blood. Hence we

may say that the predominantly Alpine element which we receive from Eastern Europe coincides to all intents and purposes with the ingredients of our population known as the Slavic, Finno-Ugrian and Letto-Lithuanian; while the amount of Iberian stock in the United States, in a proportionate sense, is practically identical with the Graeco-Latin element in the country.

From the standpoint of their immigration to the United States, the Jews, Syrians, Arabs and Armenians must be regarded as being prevalently of the Assyroid race, with varied infusions of other racial strains. In the case of the Ashkenazim Jews it is apparent that the original Jewish type has been somewhat swamped by the blood of the Khazars.<sup>113</sup> Moreover, the Ashkenazim type has been crowding the Sephardim in eastern Germany, as individuals of the latter type have emigrated or lost their foot hold. In the past thirty years the lower-class types of Ashkenazim Jews have taken the place of the Sephardim, or Iberian-Assyroid Jews, among the Jewish immigrants to the United States. Thus we may behold the vast influx of Polish, Russian, Roumanian and Hungarian Jews bringing to America a great volume of Mongolian and Alpine elements, as well as the Assyroid strain of their remote ancestors. It is reasonable to place our immigrant Arabs in the category of the Assyroid race, for it is not from the less pronounced Assyroid type of Arabs, such as the Joktanides of southern Arabia (who have for years found it a profitable enterprise to trade with the adjacent east coast and interior of the Dark Continent) that most of the Arabian immigrants to America are recruited, but from the markedly Assyroid types of Arabs who dwell on the Arabian or Levantine coast and in the valleys north of Arabia, or in lesser measure, from the Ishmaelite Arabs of North Africa, who as traders remained distinct from the Berber popu-

lation, and who are thus in part of Assyroid type. As for the Armenians, probably the most direct descendants of the Hittites, we may say that they are mainly Assyroid, with Turkish and Alpine crossings.

In arriving at the following estimates of racial groups by means of the proportions of the various nationalities in our total population, it is quite possible that in the case of certain nationalities the writer may have overestimated or underestimated the degree of preponderance of the predominant strain generally accredited to those particular nationalities; but any errors in respect to the degree or prevalence of racial elements probably counterbalance, and do not appreciably affect the general result. These are, therefore, the fairly approximate figures for each of the great race elements that in varying degree enter into the composition of the so-called white population of the United States in the year 1920:

Nordic .....	80,984,319
Mediterranean (Iberian) .....	3,993,894
Alpine (Slav) .....	4,978,178
Assyroid (Semite) .....	3,391,498
Unknown [114] .....	323,729
<hr/>	
Total "white" .....	93,671,618



## CHAPTER VI

### THE COLORED ELEMENTS

Perhaps a million copper-hued savages occupied the region which is now the United States at the time when the first white men were beginning to visit periodically the shores of North America. But long before the coming of the Puritans the numbers of these aboriginal Americans had started to decline through famine and pestilence, a ravage which has continued down to the present day, when the white plague threatens the total extinction of full-bloods among the members of this once powerful people.

The Indians who greeted the colonists at Roanoke and the Pilgrims at Plymouth were of the Algonquin tongue, at that time heard from Cape Fear to the frozen North.<sup>115</sup> The well-known Iroquois held dominion from what is now Vermont to western New York. Later they were joined by the Tuscaroras, after the "Five Nations" became a power to be reckoned with.<sup>116</sup>

The Catawbas held sway in the Carolina midlands; the Cherokees were the original Appalachian mountaineers; the Uchees dwelt southeast of the Cherokees; the Natchez were later merged with the Uchees in the Creek Confederacy; and the Muskogee-Choctaws (Mobilians) occupied the country southeast, south and west of the Cherokees, to the Atlantic, the Gulf, the Mississippi and the confluence of the Tennessee and the Ohio. The aboriginals found encamped in wigwams on the prairies east of the Mississippi by the French in 1659 were of the







Sioux tongue. Other Indians of North America, then little explored, were the tribes of the great plains, the Athabascans of the northern interior of Canada and the tribes of the Southwest and the Pacific Coast, with whom the Spaniards were coming into contact.

Nowhere has lingual difference as the basis of race been proven a more futile assumption than in the case of the American Indians. In Colonial days there were at least eight radically distinct languages east of the Mississippi alone, with a vast number of dialects, and yet from present-day indications the racial type of the Redskins from Canada to Florida must have been uniform.

The Northern tribes of the Eastern woodlands, a more or less lingual and cultural group, consisted of the Algonquins and Iroquois. The Ojibways, the chief central Algonquin tribe, were typical of these forest woodmen. The southern branch of the latter were essentially warlike and in early years repulsed the Iroquois on the east, the Foxes from the south, and drove even the Sioux before them. The League of the Iroquois, or Five Nations, dating from the dawn of the fifteenth century, controlled at one time the country from Hudson Bay to North Carolina. They almost decimated the Hurons and were only checked by the Ojibways east of Lake Superior, and by their kin, the Cherokees, in the South. The Abenaki, between Acadia and Massachusetts, eventually became allied with the French during the colonial wars, while the Iroquois were friendly to the English. Above the Great Lakes the Algonquins came under French influence; as did also the Hurons. Below the Lakes, the Illinois and Ottawas were subservient to the French.

The epic of the later advance of the Anglo-Saxons into the West beyond the Mississippi was replete with

combats between wagon trains and the savages. It is unnecessary to consider anew these combats, referred to in an earlier chapter. Suffice it to say, the Indians at last acknowledged the inevitable and retired to the reservations allowed to them by the United States government. Here some of them have plunged into sudden wealth and prosperity through the discovery of oil on their lands.

At present the reservations of the Oneidas, Onandagas, St. Regis, Tuscaroras and the few Shinnecocks are in New York State. The Senecas, Shawnees, Wyandots, Creeks, Choctaws and Chickasaws are no longer identified with the East, but are found on their respective reservations in Oklahoma. The Seminoles inhabit Florida and the Everglades, and a large branch of them are in Oklahoma. The Oneidas are in Wisconsin; the Potawatomes live in Wisconsin, Kansas and Oklahoma; the Winnebagos are found in Nebraska and South Dakota; and the Ottawas dwell in Oklahoma and Michigan. Oklahoma contains one-half of the Indians of the United States, and here we find the reservations for most of the tribes of the great plains. The latter, a free and warlike people, whose habits were once moulded by the buffalo chase, include the Apaches, Arapahoes, Kaws, Kiowas, Comanches, Modocs, Osages, Otoes, Wichitas and the Pawnees. The latter probably drifted originally from southern regions. The Cheyennes are found both in Oklahoma and Montana. The Sauk and Fox, Iowas, Kickapoos and Chippewas are on reservations in Kansas. The Sauk and Fox are also in Iowa. The Chippewas are also to be met with on reservations in Michigan and Minnesota. The Blackfeet, Flatheads and Crows all have reservations in Montana, and the latter also have another in South Dakota. In Nebraska are domiciled the Sioux, Omahas, Shoshones and Piutes, the last





INDIANS OF THE PLAINS





named having, too, a location in California and Utah. In the Southwest we note the reservations of the Hopis and Digger Indians in Arizona; the Navajos in Arizona and New Mexico; and the Pueblos, Zunis and Jicarilla Apaches in New Mexico. On the Pacific Slope reside the Chuckekansies and the Mission Indians of California, among others.

Since the coming of civilization the Indian rate of increase has steadily diminished, irrespective of the slight increase in population each decade; and all signs point to the gradual extinction of this people, either naturally or by infusion into other races. Yet there has been surprisingly little blood of the remnants of the aborigines taken into the veins of white Americans, except in one or two States like Oklahoma and in some isolated districts of the Northwest, and even in those regions the "squawman" has lost his social prestige. Even in early days, when the nomadic savages were comparatively more numerous than they are now, there was not much admixture of whites with Indians in the United States. It was primarily the instinctive race pride of pure Nordics that saved the land north of Mexico for the white race. Certain hunters and trappers, among the French Canadians of the Northwest in particular, did break down the racial barrier, but their few halfbreed descendants will be absorbed in the great new European population. To-day, while the halfbreeds increase somewhat, the pure Indian strain is declining rapidly. Recognizing this fact, the Bureau of American Ethnology is hastening to make an exhaustive study into the history and character of the Amerind, which will be invaluable to coming generations when the American Indian is no more.

Last reports show that only three full-blooded individuals of the Shawnee tribe remain; that there are no more full-bloods among the Kickapoos; and that there

are only about four hundred full-bloods left alive of that Blackfoot tribe which, only fifty years ago, owned all the land between the Yellowstone and the Canadian border.

Moreover, it is not impossible that emigration may some day aid in diminishing the numbers of our red-skinned population, for there is said to be a growing desire among the Indians of the Shawnee Superintendency to betake themselves to Mexico, where they may retain their former life and customs. For years members of the Kickapoo tribe have lived near the Santa Rosa Mountains in Mexico, but they have remained wards of Uncle Sam, and once every three months journey to Eagle Pass, Texas, to receive their quarterly allowance. Now, many of the Seminoles, who were originally granted a reservation by the Mexican government in the Santa Rosa Mountains, and who left it to enter the Union army during the Civil War, are preparing to return, with the permission of the Mexican government.

It must not be forgotten, however, that the peon Mexicans of our border States are prevailingly of Indian strain themselves, and that they have brought a large quantity of Indian blood into the United States. The swarthy faces under peaked hats are a common sight in the section gangs of the Santa Fé or the Southern Pacific; for the Mexicans, who inherit the industrious Aztec strain, are almost as competent as the indentured Chinese who built the Union Pacific.

The movement of Mexicans to and from the United States is largely regulated by the demand for labor in the Southwest. During the World War the high wages attracted an unprecedented number of Mexicans. Those who were illiterate were allowed, in many cases, to enter under a term of indenture, their employers being responsible for their return. Also, the immigration authorities admit that the poor facilities for guarding the

long border line allowed many "wetbacks," or clandestine immigrants, to cross the Rio Grande. Then, too, for some years past the Southern republic had been a land of terror to the peons, for they invariably found themselves between the fires of rival factions, so that the movement of Mexicans into the United States was augmented. It now appears, however, that this movement was only temporary, and the hard times following the War forced many of the Mexicans to go back whence they came. The lot of some of the Mexicans stranded without work in the United States was often quite deplorable, and for a time emigration from Mexico was discouraged as much as possible by the Mexican government.

Most of our Spanish-speaking population is found in the States of Arizona and New Mexico. In the former State the Mexicans amount to about twenty per cent, or more, of the population, which was some 333,000 according to the 1920 Census, and many of the old families are of Mexican descent. In New Mexico the Roman Catholics form a majority of the population of the State, about 330,000 according to the Census of 1920. In multitudes of towns and small communities of our Southwest, the language of politics, home and mart is Spanish. In southern California alone, it is estimated, there are 150,000 Mexicans; 60,000 of these live in the peon quarter of Los Angeles. In Kansas City a colony of 18,000 dwells about the railroad yards. San Antonio, Texas, has 40,000.

The Mexicans of the peon class are looked upon by border Americans much as the Negroes are regarded throughout the South. They are not welcomed as social equals, but their labor is regarded as necessary to the Southwest, and hence they are tolerated.<sup>117</sup>

It has been asserted that half the people of Mexico

die before the age of seven, while half the Americans do not die until the age of forty-two. If that be true, it would seem that the Mexican population in the United States has risen more owing to immigration than through natural increase. Perhaps it is significant that New Mexico, the State which includes the largest proportionate number of persons of Mexican blood, in spite of the large immigration from the other side of the border, has not kept pace with the rate of increase of the native stock throughout the country; although it must be admitted that Arizona, on the other hand, showed an increase of sixty-three per cent in the decade leading up to 1920, from an obviously swelling immigration.

From the passionate Penitentes (a religious sect found in the northeastern counties of New Mexico, and somewhat in southern Colorado, the members of which lash themselves and undergo various other tortures), to the stolid Mexican day laborer, the Mexican population of our border States proves to be a people of diverse and varied character; undoubtedly due to the admixture of radically diverse races since the Spanish Conquest.

### THE NEGROES

The slave trade brought Negroes to the mainland Colonies of North America as early as the year 1619, when a Dutch ship landed twenty African slaves at Jamestown, Virginia—to which is due the fact that the blacks were one of the earliest elements in our population.<sup>118</sup>

Other contingents of slaves were imported into Massachusetts from Barbados before the year 1638; and previous to the year 1650, the Dutch West India Company was bringing slaves to New Netherlands. Indeed it was probably only because of climate and environment that New England and New York did not eventually become slave States.

Spain, Portugal, England, Denmark and the American Colonies had all entered the slave trade during the seventeenth century; yet the importation of Negroes to the North American mainland was small until the British secured the privilege of the Asiento in 1713. Then it was that the Negro and the Nordic, for the first time in history, began to meet in nearly equal numbers within a temperate zone (in the Southern Colonies); and from the first the question was not so much that of slavery and freedom as it was the relationship between whites and blacks. Even in Virginia during Colonial times ineffectual attempts were made to limit the importation of slaves, in the instinctive realization of the problem that would be imposed. In the South of the present day the race question remains the paramount issue, and the reorganization of the Ku Klux Klan is not the least of the indications of the problem which confronts us with increasing gravity as time goes on.

The slave trade was abolished in 1807, but slaves continued to be smuggled in through various narrow inlets in the coastline, particularly near Galveston and Fernandina. Partly as a result of the repressive measure of 1819 the traffic lessened; but between 1850 and 1860 the cotton industry so magnified the demand for slaves that the slave trade was almost openly revived and, according to the estimate of Stephen A. Douglas, 15,000 slaves were brought into the country in 1859. In fact, it was only as a result of the Civil War that the slave trade was practically suppressed; and, at that, a squadron of warships was compelled to patrol the slave coast up to the year 1866.

But thousands of slaves had gained their freedom, for years before the Civil War, via the "Underground Railroad." The various "stations" (garrets and cellars of private houses, etc.) dotted the favored routes through



Ohio and Pennsylvania, where many Quakers, New Englanders, Pennsylvania Dutch or Scotch-Irish Presbyterians were only too ready to defy the institution of slavery which their forefathers, themselves tillers of the soil, had always railed against. The Dismal Swamp in Virginia became an often sought hiding place of the Negro fugitives on their journey to Canada. The Swamp became a veritable colony where protection was found temporarily against the fearful and indefatigable bloodhounds. In Florida many Negroes vanished into the Everglades, some of them intermarrying with the Indians. In fact, the Seminole Wars are mainly to be attributed to the influence wielded by these embittered people.

After the Reconstruction period the position of many of the Negroes had become so unbearable that a general convention in 1879 encouraged migration to the North and West. Thousands of Negroes left the old South for Missouri, Indiana and Kansas, the latter State receiving some 40,000 in twenty months. In one week alone 5,000 are said to have moved from South Carolina to Arkansas. But most significant of all, the Liberian Exodus Stock Company was formed by Negroes in the year 1877, for the purpose of sending Negro emigrants to Africa, and to establish a regular line of steamers between Monrovia and Charleston to bring African products to the United States. It is to the everlasting disgrace of the white people of Charleston that they, in their great greed, resented any loss to the supply of Negro labor, and induced custom house officials not to grant clearance papers until a new copper bottom had been built on the ship "*Azar*"; which brought the cost of the ship from seven thousand dollars up to nine thousand. It was even more disgraceful that the "*Azar*" was stolen and sold in Liverpool, through the connivance of her captain and prominent business men of Charleston; and, what is more,



the United States Circuit Court in South Carolina refused to entertain the suit brought by the Negroes.<sup>119</sup>

As early as the year 1710 there were 50,000 slaves in the mainland Colonies, who increased to 220,000 in 1750, and to 462,000 in 1770, according to estimates. At the time of the Census of 1790 there were 746,770 slaves, most of them pure Negroes.<sup>120</sup> In early years the increase of the blacks was by no means dwarfed in comparison with the proportionate increase of the whites, particularly when it is considered that the latter were augmented by immigration. However, the inroads of consumption, venereal disease and other race-destroying plagues have been affecting the high Negro birth rate in late years, and the high mortality of the Negroes has been manifest in the last two Censuses.<sup>121</sup>

In past years the habitat of the blacks has been principally in the Southern States, and it does not appear that this circumstance will be much changed in the future.<sup>122</sup> While it is true that many Negroes came North during the World War to benefit by the shortage of labor and the prevailing war wages, many of them have since returned. The race riots in Northern cities, the shutting down of industries, and the prevalence of the white plague and pneumonia in the Northern climate, doubtless started the trek of Southern Negroes back to the home land through Cincinnati or other gateways from the Middle West to the South.<sup>132</sup> The 1920 Census shows that the proportion of Southern-born Negroes who migrated to the North or West was only about one-fourth larger than the proportion of Negroes born in the North or West who migrated to the South.

On the other hand, the West Indian Negro immigrants are rapidly adding to the colored population of New York City. They are for the most part a restless lot and sometimes individuals are impudently assertive of

their "superiority" as British subjects. They are mostly domestics.

The African Negroes of the United States are in general of the true Negro type—tall in stature, with long head, broad nose, thick lips and frizzly black hair. The majority came from the region of the Bight of Benin, from that part of the west coast of Africa known as the Slave Coast; but some of the later ones arrived from the coast opposite Zanzibar.<sup>124</sup> The West Indian blacks, who have been represented in the immigration of the past two decades, are probably somewhat racially distinct from our Southern Negroes; for many of their progenitors were recruited originally from the Hottentot and Bushman districts of Southern Africa. In other words, the present Negro population of the United States is largely Sudanese, mixed with Bantus (who show traces of Arab, Berber and Semitic strain) and their near kin, the West Coast Negroes; and some dwarfs. Then, too, at the present day, at least one-fifth (according to the Census of 1910) of the Negroes are mulattoes (i.e., "not evidently full-blooded Negroes, but having some trace of Negro blood"), both as the result of the system of concubinage of colored women in slavery days, and the continuing, if less prevalent, relations of white men with colored women in recent years. Undoubtedly, however, there has been a decrease of illicit relations between whites and blacks of late, due to social pressure. Which seems to suggest that the white people as well as the black need to be educated in respect to the Negro problem; and that the progressive education of the poor whites in the South will gradually do away with the crime of miscegenation, which is an insult to Negro womankind. Certainly the African has gained through contact with American institutions, and further growth of race consciousness on the part of the Negro will go far toward solving the question of miscegena-

tion. Both whites and blacks, then, must develop a strong pride in their essential characteristics, out of which will be evolved a desire to preserve their homogeneity.<sup>125</sup>

What is our policy with regard to the Negro? The English have definite policies with respect to their colored populations in South Africa and India. But America appears to have no policy whatsoever. With her fears for her race and civilization, can America afford to let the Negro problem drift along? Although the rate of increase of the blacks is less than that of the whites, nevertheless the former (including mulattoes) grow measurably every decade and constitute a rapidly rising racial menace. It is certain that education will advance among the colored people from year to year, and the difficulty will increase as to how the intelligent man of Negro blood may have an opportunity to work out an untrameled existence. It is a noteworthy fact that during the World War many colored men and women entered industries which were new to them, showing the tendency of the better class of blacks to improve their economic and financial standing. Doubtless the cotton field of the South will require the Negro for many generations (it has even been suggested that he take the place of the Japanese laborers and farmers in California); but, as education progresses, the number of unskilled laborers among the Negroes will inevitably decrease.

Already the blacks actually outnumber the whites in certain States. If the Negro is not to be disfranchised, are his ambitions always to be thwarted both politically and socially? Shall "Jim Crowism" in hostelry and train travel be continued forever? Would it not be better for us to relegate the Negroes to reservations, or at least to acquire and cultivate certain regions for them?

We have already accorded riches to the Indian because we usurped the land which he never would have improved in a thousand years. Yet did we not do the Negro an infinitely greater injury by cursing him with slavery and its dreadful aftermath?

“A little child, they caught me as the savage  
beast is caught,

Then hither me across the sea the cruel slaver  
brought.”<sup>126</sup>

The future generations will owe their social welfare and the alleviation of their race problem to the steps we may take with respect to the solution of the race problem of to-day. We now reproach our ancestors for their lack of foresight, which cost us a million young lives in the Civil War, to mention only a small part of the evils resulting from slavery. We can thank them, however, in a measure, that they were at last aroused to abolition of the slave trade in 1808, which, if it did not entirely stop Negro immigration, did at least reduce the stream. For if that had not been accomplished, the Negro population of to-day would have been as large as the white, with results that we hardly like to contemplate. The least of the dire consequences would have been a hideous race war. Incidentally, we are even now augmenting our dilemma by allowing great numbers of West Indian Negroes to enter the country annually; and this influx also is a decided disadvantage to our American Negroes, as well as to the whites, for it means added competition for jobs.

However much our conscience is concerned for the Negroes, we cannot blind ourselves to the serious situation created by the presence of some ten million of them here. Are we Americans of this generation losing the genius to face the greatest problems frankly and fear-

lessly? A preceding generation took up its responsibilities in bringing the question of slavery to a settlement. Is it not our duty to force a reconstruction that will benefit both the Negro and future generations? Unheard-of treasure would yet be cheap if by its payment we might free the nation of the dread incubus of miscegenation.

One very interesting plan to solve the Negro question has been vaguely contemplated, in a more or less visionary manner, for years. It dates back to the year 1792, when twelve hundred Negroes, who had escaped from the United States to Canada, were transported to the British African colony of Sierra Leone. Then again, in 1822, the American Colonization Society was formed, which eventually founded Liberia. Although, in those days of difficult transportation, the trials were too great and the project at last proved a failure, yet the little Republic of Liberia survives to the present day in the hands of the descendants of American Negroes, and as a sovereign member of the League of Nations; and under the sphere of American influence this little Negro nation may take on a new lease of life. To-day American naval engineers instruct the populace in sanitary measures and improve the welfare of the little Negro republic.

However, it was the general view of the American public, during the period leading up to the World War, that it would be utterly impossible to transport so large a multitude of our Negroes to Africa, albeit over a long term of years. At that time the world did not know that over two million American soldiers would some day be conveyed across the ocean to France, through the submarine blockade and the mine fields, in the short space of twelve months; and that they would be set down in a land "milked dry," so that of necessity they would be forced to take most necessities with them. The world did



not know that it would be startled by the virtual cities, railroads, ports and institutions that would spring up in France. But we know this to-day; and we know, too, that, if our idealism is great enough, we can transport millions of blacks abroad, colonize them in self supporting communities under United States jurisdiction; and have wealth and resources to spare. As a matter of fact, we could make such a scheme self-supporting by utilizing the labor of the Negroes to improve regions with vast resources still untouched. The scheme is not visionary if the nation is big enough to carry through a settled policy which might be fulfilled only after many years of self-abnegation, but whose final results would be as great a benefit to future generations as reforestation or any system of conservation of our national resources.

The former German possessions in Africa, including healthful upland regions, might be acquired by the United States, the purchase price being offset in part by the war debts of Europe. Then, again, arrangements might be made with Brazil, Merico, Venezuela or the European governments of the Guianas to transfer part of the American Negroes to those countries, with the proviso that United States capitalists supply the necessary funds to develop the countries in question.<sup>127</sup> Or, as a third contingency, but one which would obviously be more or less temporary in view of the ages to come, we may quote John L. Sewell, as follows: "Suppose we try, as an economic experiment, to remove ignorance, stir inertia, rouse ambition, and develop productivity in . . . our native-born population who have admixture of Negro blood; will it necessarily prove a harder task than we are now finding it to eradicate communism and control foreign propaganda among aliens now here or likely to come to us?"<sup>128</sup>

Lastly, in this connection, we might adapt, to the pe-



culiar exigencies of the Negro problem in the United States, the plan proposed by General Botha in South Africa; that is, to relegate the Negro population, or at least a portion of it, to certain reservations. In such districts, set aside for their welfare, the Negroes might be able to work out their destiny with financial and technical assistance, to begin with. At least the attempt could be made on a small scale to determine the extent of the Negro's ability to progress when protected from the competition of the whites.<sup>129</sup>

By his illuminating excerpts from many Negro newspapers, Professor Kerlin has shown that the American Negro views his own problems intelligently as a rule, and that he reads his own newspapers eagerly in the smallest towns or most remote cabins, as well as in the great cities.<sup>130</sup> Moreover, the recent organizing of a steamship line by a Negro syndicate, for travel and trade with the West Indies, and eventually Africa, is perhaps an augury as well as a manifestation with respect to the trend of mind of our citizens of African descent.

It is not to be denied that the Negro is obsessed by a superstition that appears to have been an inherent characteristic of the Negro in the New World, from the time he set foot in the Colonies down to the present day. From the fact that some native priests were carried to America, a degraded religion appeared in the West Indies; from which arose the Voodooism which is still prevalent in a milder form (sometimes associated with Christian worship) among our American Negroes. But education is gradually stamping out the worst forms of these pagan rites. While to most intents and purposes the Negro must be regarded as having come to America with no civilization of his own, yet it is not to be denied that the traditions of folk-lore and folk-music of the Negroes have had their influence upon the life and cus-

toms of the American people, white as well as black. In general the Negroes are American in their political outlook. They speak the language of the country. In fact, much can be said in their favor; for example their racial quality of loyalty and responsiveness to good influence.

### THE CHINESE

It was the discovery of gold in California that brought the first race problem to the Far West; for this phenomenon, that attracted so many white men, also lured the Chinaman also. Then, during the railroad expansion of the early industrial era, many Chinese worked as laborers on the railways, most of them, however, as indentured workers.

During the thirty years after 1854, an average of 9,600 Chinese arrived yearly; but with the adoption of the exclusion law, prohibiting the entry of the coolie class, the Chinese influx was stopped as suddenly as it had begun. During the thirty-five years after the first exclusion act became effective, the total immigration from China was only some 56,000; and during the years since 1908, in which statistics of emigration as well as immigration have been kept, the number of aliens departing for China has slightly exceeded the number admitted from that country.

Perhaps the census figures show more significantly how restriction measures have reduced the Chinese population in the United States. Thus, in 1860, there were about 35,000 Chinamen in this country. In 1880, just before the first exclusion act, there were 104,000. In 1890, following the exclusion measure, there were nearly 107,000. But in 1900 this high mark receded to about 81,000, and the 1910 Census showed that there were only 56,756 Chinese in the United States in that year. Also it is most significant that in 1910 there were 3,074 Chinese

males to every 100 females, which fact presages a slow increase in the native-born Chinese population. To-day immigration from China to the United States, what there is of it, includes for the most part people of British stock.

In other words, the number of Chinese in this country has not been growing, but dwindling; and as a result the Chinese are no longer a menace, either to our laboring people or to our racial integrity. The former hostility toward this particular yellow folk has disappeared, and there is a general friendliness toward Chinese nationals in the United States to-day. The dark-visaged Chinese coolie has become a curiosity to Americans. Only the importation of minor sons of Chinese exempt classes appears to offset, in part, emigration of Chinese.

#### THE JAPANESE

A far different state of affairs obtains in the case of the Japanese; as is demonstrated by the fact that the local race hostility of the Pacific Coast is spreading throughout the nation, with an intensity that is bound to increase, unless steps are taken to restrict Japanese immigration exactly as in the case of the Chinese.

It is most illuminating to observe the figures for the Japanese immigrants both before and after the passport agreement of 1908. As a matter of fact, Japan appears in the immigration statistics for the first time as early as 1861, but from that year up to 1890 only a few hundreds entered the country. But this number constantly grew through net immigration and a prolific birth rate. For a time after the "gentlemen's agreement" went into effect, it appeared that the plan was successful, for emigration of Japanese from the United States was comparable to the number of arrivals into the country, but the recent rapid increase of Japanese in the country during the decade from 1910 to 1920, and, above all, the considerable movement of so-called picture brides, proves

that the Japanese government is either unwilling or is powerless to live up to the terms of the agreement. For which reason the grievance of the Californians and other Western Americans is a most just one.<sup>131</sup> The agitation of the State of California over the matter of Japanese immigration led the Japanese government to acquiesce in a compact to prohibit the further importation of Japanese women, but the Californians are now sceptical, with good reason, as to the future intentions of the Island Kingdom, and are now advocating a drastic law to include Japan within our barred zones.<sup>132</sup>

We have seen some agitation on the part of anti-restrictionists, who present figures to show that the future increase of the Japanese in the West would not be as great as is asserted by the undoubtedly wrought-up people of the Pacific Coast. To the mind of the writer it is not a question of what the proportion of Japanese to the general population should be. The question is whether or not they would make desirable Americans, and, above all, whether they are assimilable. And the answer is that a Japanese, even one who is professedly an American citizen, is still a subject of Japan, and that the children of Japanese carry the physical characteristics of the Japanese race and must always remain a distinctive branch in the community. It makes little difference whether there are one or one million Japanese in the United States, as far as the principle is concerned. The Japanese with some wealth, however moderate, can always find some white woman who will unthinkingly enter into matrimony with him. The children of such a marriage are done an irreparable injury. Their Eurasian type will make them pariahs among American school children.<sup>133</sup> When grown-ups they will still be Japanese. The undiluted purity of the white race is far more important than all the doctrines of liberty and

democracy ever promulgated, for after all the latter are essentially the natural outcome of race homogeneity. More will be said of this in a later chapter.

"It is precisely because the American people had the experience of so profound a racial problem affecting the course of their entire history that they do not wish to become involved in another racial problem of still greater difficulty and danger . . . .

"Keep in mind the fact that, in the larger aspects of history, we have thus far been making an American nationality and that we shall be continuing the process during the remainder of the present century. Forced immigration brought millions of Negro laborers across the Atlantic to our Southern coasts. In a later period there were labor conditions which set in motion a tide from China, and then from Japan, which, unless checked, was destined inevitably to change the population character of the United States west of the great plains and the Rocky Mountains.

"The Africans had no civilization and no power to compete with white men except upon a menial plane. The Chinese and the Japanese had a background of ancient civilization and a marvelous capacity for economic achievement when removed from their restricted opportunities at home . . . . The shining virtues of these Asiatic people, in contrast with the glaring faults of the Americans and Europeans, supply a great part of the reason for the alarmed opposition that is now manifest on the Pacific Coast. . . . .

"The Californians are passionately eager to be allowed to try the experiment . . . of trying to maintain a white man's country. The white people of the Southern States—after the Negroes were emancipated and were invested by the Constitution of the United States with all civil and political rights—were also passionately determined



to . . . maintain what they called a 'Caucasian' civilization. . . . And since there was no outside power to interfere on behalf of the undeveloped race, the whites reassumed and easily maintained their supremacy. But the Pacific Coast problem has elements that are far more difficult to deal with. The Asiatics . . . have behind them a high civilization and powerful statesmanship.

"In both Japan and China the pressure of population upon the means of existence is beyond the understanding of the average American. These Oriental countries are rapidly acquiring our modern methods of abolishing the ravages of epidemic disease, and the decimation of provinces by famine. These improved methods of saving life will serve to make more inevitable the pressure of surplus population. Where are these teeming millions to go, in the years to come, to find work and food?

"If these were merely speculative questions, we should not be dealing with them . . . They are questions of so practical a sort in the minds of many thousands of Americans that they constitute the foremost issue . . . in so important a State as California.

"It is not a stagnant and decaying community that the Japanese are confronting on our Pacific Coast. California, by this new Census of 1920, has made a larger percentage of growth in . . . ten years than any of the populous States. . . . Washington and Oregon have exceeded the average national rate. . . .

"But when one considers the sparsely settled portions of the earth, there are questions arising that cannot be answered conclusively. . . . Is it not probable that Manchuria, Mongolia and even considerable parts of Russian Siberia may be more urgently required for population growth by the Japanese, Chinese and Koreans . . . than by the . . . Russian Slavs of Europe?

"That the Japanese are to find outlets, and to enjoy in-



creased influence and prosperity, is to be expected; and it is no true part of American policy to oppose a position that Japan is destined to make for herself in Asia."<sup>134</sup>

Where Japanese once enter a district, the white people, either because of race aloofness or economic pressure, immediately vacate, leaving the property in the possession of the Japanese, who are able to buy or rent the lands at a very low valuation, because the white owners would have been unable to find lessees or purchasers. In other words, the rapidly rising control of real estate and soil products by the Japanese means, eventually, economic control of the region.

About two-thirds of the Japanese in continental United States are located in California, and in the neighborhood of three-quarters of that number are to be found within the confines of seven counties. According to the 1920 Census, there are 70,196 Japanese in California; 17,114 in Washington; and 4,022 in Oregon.<sup>135</sup> The displacement of white workers is amply demonstrated by the concentration of the Japanese in Florin and Sacramento counties, in the orchards of Placer County, in the Imperial Valley, in various sections of the San Joachim Valley and County, in Colusa County, and south of the Techachapi Mountains. Even in Colorado are to be met some Japanese; indeed it is said that they raise eighty-five per cent of the melons at Rocky Ford in that State. Other small settlements of Japanese are located in the Rio Grande Valley; although a virtual ban has been placed on further additions of Japanese settlers by vigilance committees of white citizens and land-restriction laws rushed through by the legislators of the border States, closely paralleling those of California. The merchant and professional classes of the Japanese are for the most part sojourning in the large cities, both East

and West. The group in New York City has increased considerably in the past decade.

One of the most unreasonable features of the Japanese objections to what they term "race discrimination" is the fact that they erected precisely the same kind of laws in Japan against the Koreans and Chinese, when the latter threatened the standard of living in Japan by their greater thrift and inferior living conditions. Yet the Japanese are akin to the Koreans, and far less remote from the Chinese than the Americans are to the yellow races. Furthermore, the Japanese do not in general allow foreigners to hold land in the Japanese Empire.

The Japanese question is not a California question, or a Pacific Coast problem, or a problem for the Western States. It is a national question, above all. As Senator Phelan, of California, pointed out, there is nothing peculiar about the Californians, for instance, to differentiate them from the citizens of the remaining States. They were citizens of other States. The original immigration in 1849, and the more recent immigration in the tens of thousands from New York, Indiana, Illinois and Iowa, shows this.

The plea of the Californians, or rather their demand, has a firm basis in the fact that every individual Japanese admitted to the United States is the potential father or mother of generations to come. The white population may some day have a fast-falling birth rate, as economic conditions produce it; but that will never be the case with the rapidly increasing Japanese immigrants and their progeny. The latter are inherently prepared to continue a prolific birth rate under the most cruel economic conditions.

#### OTHER COLORED ELEMENTS

Over two thousand more Turks arrived in the United States than departed, in the decade from 1910 to 1920;

and the Immigration Bureau, according to the Report of the Commissioner-General, is apprehensive that these Moslems, having made a beginning, may become a more important factor in our immigration from the Near East.

Hitherto the Census Bureau has classed the Turk as white in its Foreign Stock Census. As a matter of fact, those coming to the United States in the past have been of the wealthier classes, whose strain includes in part the blood of original Turkish ancestors, but with a considerable admixture of Circassian, Georgian or Armenian blood from female ancestors of the latter nationalities, secured by the Turks for their harems. In general, however, our Turkish immigrants are now sprung from the lower classes of Turkey, and hence must be regarded as of Tartar blood, or, in other words, of predominantly non-white stock.

Also, the Census Bureau includes under the term "all other" in its Census of Foreign Stocks the Gypsies, Persians, Kurds and Georgians. It is not to be denied that all of these are in part of white blood, but it is another thing to regard them as being of pure white blood.

The Gypsies are of obscure origin, but the general theory is that they came from India originally, and in their travels absorbed the blood of a multitude of other nationalities. Undoubtedly some of the best Anglo-Saxon blood runs in the veins of some of our Gypsies. In the main, however, their swarthy skin and wandering habits indicate an Eastern affinity, and for this reason the writer has seen fit to include them with the "Colored Elements."

Perhaps, in the past, most of our Persian immigrants were of the high caste, in whom the strain of white Aryan ancestors is strong, but even the most patrician of this folk have a very strong infusion of Tartar, Dravidian, Arab, or even Negroid blood. In a forecast of im-

migration, laid before Congress just prior to the passage of the latest restrictive immigration law, Secretary of State Hughes presented reports of our foreign representatives, showing that Persian immigration must in the future be viewed as undesirable.

The Kurds, in spite of their Aryan tongue, must be regarded essentially as of Tartar stock. Their character and wild proclivities (in contrast to the settled Armenian, to whom they are lingually akin) are sufficient indication of their Asiatic origin.

The Georgians are perhaps the most white of all those mentioned above. With their kin, the Circassians, they are distinguished by a splendid physical type that is in marked contrast to the surrounding population of ungainly and uncouth Tartars. Yet, like the high caste Turks, they must have received great infusions of Tartar and other Asiatic blood through the centuries, and, if we receive the lower classes among our immigrants, the proportion of Tartar blood will be predominant.

On the other hand, the Census Bureau includes the Hindus, Koreans, Filipinos and Maoris under its tabulation of colored population of the United States. The Bureau admits that, in the case of the Hindus, we may often, perhaps, receive high caste representatives among the immigrants from India. Nevertheless, in view of the fact that even these high caste East Indians are at least in part of Dravidian or Mongolian blood, and that the great bulk of the population of India is colored, it was thought best to include all Hindus with the colored stock.

Following are the approximate numbers of the colored elements in 1920.<sup>136</sup>

Negro .....	10,463,131*
Indian (including peon Mexican) .....	1,385,005
Japanese (including Korean) .....	112,234*
Chinese (including Manchu) .....	61,639*
Turkish .....	7,955
Hindu .....	2,507*
Polynesian (Hawaiian, Maori, Samoan), Siamese, Malay .....	154*
Filipino (Malay) .....	5,603
All other (Gypsy, Persian, Kurd, Georgian) .....	874†
<b>Total</b> .....	<b>12,039,001*</b>

\*The revised figures (announced September 26, 1921) for the 1920 Census. The difference of 41 between these corrected figures and the preliminary figures given in Note 136 must be relegated to the statistics of white population. (See Tables in Chapter V.)

†The number of Rumanian Gypsies alone in the United States has been roughly estimated as high as 25,000. However indeterminate their number, it seems certain that there are at least several thousands here.

## CHAPTER VII

### ASSIMILATION AND HEREDITY

This is the age of science. The value of the racial factor, heredity, will in the years to come play a far greater part in the promulgation of national welfare; and Americans to be will look back at these now approaching years as of the most tremendous import in the ethnic evolution of the American people.<sup>137</sup>

For the generations of Americans of the last four decades there should be no defense. In failing to meet our obligations to future generations through our mad lust for untoward wealth, we cannot offer the plea of inexperience. We have merely tried, but unsuccessfully, to blind ourselves to the failure of the so-called melting-pot. The longer we procrastinate in barring promiscuous and unassimilable immigration, by just so much are we burdening our coming generations with an insidious menace.

If we could recall the years, how many of us would wish the South to be populated in part with Negroes? Yet an even more rampant danger, from so-called white people of lowest quality, now threatens our native white stock; for we may segregate the Negro because of his remote racial type, but the qualities of low class Europeans will gradually and inevitably demoralize our body politic through the introduction of a new heredity character and temperament among us.

Of course certain unthinking folk will jump forward with the theory that the stock of low attainments is some-



what improved in future generations as a result of contact with the stock of genius. That is true in an economic sense, or from the standpoint of hygiene and physical welfare. But the accepted laws of heredity and anthropology assert that what improvement is brought about is merely outward veneer; whereas neither the hereditary mental or physical traits can be effaced or converted within a few generations.

Professor Karl Pearson says, "You cannot change the leopard's spots, and you cannot change bad stock to good; you may dilute it, possibly spread it over a large area, spoiling good stock, but until it ceases to multiply it will not cease to be."

Why spend time and money in an attempt to amend poor stock, as it rapidly increases in numbers, when by keeping it out of the world's newly occupied territories its species could be kept from propagating unduly?

This is not a matter of race prejudice, but a provision for the sustaining of a superior breed of men among future generations. In the words of Calvin Coolidge, "Every man has the right to be well born." We must root out the evil at its source; that is, by barring immigrant aliens who are obviously unfit to father future American citizens.<sup>138</sup> Immigration restriction of undesirables is the surest method of segregation of unfit parents.<sup>139</sup>

Even if it is true that minority races in a mixed community may possibly be slowly bred out through many centuries, the point merely serves to illustrate that God and nature never intended that race admixture should be countenanced or promoted by man-made laws; but that the drift should be toward race homogeneity, each race essaying the best within its powers for the benefit of mankind.

The United States, with Canada and Australia, offers

the only habitable land remaining for extensive North-west European settlement or colonization. We owe it to the world in general (which will look to us for guidance in the future) that North America shall support a sturdy population of progressive elements, in which will be found the traits that inspired our political and social framework; rather than a rapidly multiplying population of backward, visionary, half-barbaric, detrimental elements that have contributed practically naught to modern civilization, except where exploited for their labor, and who have been proven incapable of assimilation with highly organized communities. To such as the latter there still remain productive Siberia and Latin America, in which to prove their capacity for initiative and enterprise.

But more particularly do Americans owe it to their country and posterity that future generations should be protected from the replacement of the traits that are their birthright by traits of mediocre or worthless character. There is no more race prejudice in trying to eliminate people of backward hereditary mentality from the community than there is in prohibiting the entry of the diseased, the lame, the blind or any person likely to become a public charge. It is the spirit of patriotism that sees in the preservation of the American type the best means of assuring the continuity of our race life. It has already been shown that even if the Nordic strain shall survive the inroads of lower strains in the centuries to come within its northern environment, yet the process of breeding out these considerable numbers of backward groups may well prove so long and tedious that untold havoc can be wrought in the interim. It will not be so easy to dispose of wrong results of experimenting.

In the future, environment will not determine the genius of a people, but the inherent ability of certain

racess will dominate and overcome geographical conditions. By modern irrigation the Nórdic race will claim the desert lands of our own West, whereas potential Mexico is doomed through lethargy unless developed by the higher types of mankind. Racial affinity is associated, not with the region in which people dwell, but in the remote origin of that people.

Frederick Adams Wood, lecturer on biology at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology and the Harvard Medical School, actually expresses the ruling influence of heredity in percentages. He finds that heredity explains more than fifty per cent of moral differences and ninety per cent of intellectual differences.

It cannot but be admitted that the views of leading biologists and anthropologists sometimes conflict at this time. Therefore the layman must construct his views from a consensus of opinion and limit himself to the most significant features of anthropology and biology, pending the more advanced decisions expected from active research work in these kindred sciences.

However, Herbert Spencer, Agassiz and a host of biologists warn us against the mongrelization of races. The knowledge of the Jews that mongrelization deteriorates the race kept them for centuries pure in blood, and made them a factor to be reckoned with in the affairs of the world. The qualities of achievement of the purer type of Western European Jew, as compared to the mixed type of Poland, Russia and Eastern Europe, is but one manifestation in support of the plea for an unmixed basic stock. Mongrelization doomed the Chaldeans, Phoenicians, Greeks, Carthaginians, Egyptians, Indo-Aryans and Romans. Spain and Portugal deteriorated after the conquest by the Moors and the incorporation of Moorish blood. The splendor of the Conquistadors in Latin America was fated to end when they stooped to mix with a

race of remote strain. France is still powerful only because the Nordic race is yet predominant in the Northern Departments, and the Iberian race is comparatively unmixed in the South. The Slavs, Magyars and even the Italians, or at least those in the southern peninsula are evident examples of the unstable results of race crossing. Who are the leaders in the world to-day? Those Nordics who have retained a comparative homogeneity of blood, those members of the pure Jewish strain, and, perhaps to some extent, the comparatively distinct Japanese. Of course too close inbreeding is dangerous (as we shall show later); but that fact does not apply to nations of millions of individuals.

"The view that the Negro slave was an unfortunate cousin of the white man, deeply tanned by the tropic sun, and denied the blessings of Christianity and civilization, played no small part with the sentimentalists of the Civil War period, and it has taken us fifty years to learn that speaking English, wearing good clothes, and going to church and to school, does not transform a Negro into a white man . . . We shall have a similar experience with the Polish Jews, whose dwarf stature, peculiar mentality and concentration on self-interest are being engrafted upon the stock of the nation."<sup>140</sup>

The current of Mediterranean blood in the south of Italy is somewhat analogous to the Negro population in our own South. Both are, at least in part, the descendants of slaves imported into the respective countries at different periods. By the fact that the North African (if not negroid) slaves of southern Italy were of less remote race than Negroes, the patrician Romans, because of their scarcity of numbers, were soon engulfed; whereas the dominating numbers of the Cavaliers of our own South were able to escape the racial deluge of Negroes. But to-day both Negroes and Southern Italians speak

Aryan tongues, albeit they are probably far removed from the pure Aryan strain.

In the United States intermarriage is for the most part confined to persons of the same racial group, and in some cases to the same national group. The more diverse the groups to which persons belong, the less likely are they to intermarry.<sup>141</sup> This condition may not prevail in future centuries, however. The "colonial" aspect will gradually be eliminated as the result of the shuffling of population. There will be no blended quality of genius, for there is no such thing. Five thousand years, according to the French Egyptologists, did not change the types of man portrayed in ancient wall paintings, identical with present-day types. Therefore it is precarious to assume that a quick change will be brought about in present-day types in the United States.

Doubtless certain parents tend to carry germ cells that do not transmit the type to the children; but reversion to type is verified by every day observation.

No man of pure racial strain should feel a supercilious pride because of his possession of that quality of his physical and mental makeup, any more than he should feel pride for his physical superiority over a cripple or mental superiority over a mental defective. The term of race should be applicable, not to individuals, but only to the general community. But from the standpoint of patriotism he should have a pride in that community, and from the standpoint of humanitarianism his duty is to protect future generations from hereditary instability. In the words of H. G. Wells, "We have tamed and bred the beasts, but we have still to tame and breed ourselves."<sup>142</sup>

In her rampant quest of wealth America may some day regret—if this is not happening already—that she did not enquire into the composition of her people. Are



we, like the Chinese, to follow merely in the footsteps of forefathers, who were not confronted with the biological types of our new immigration?

Pride of race has preserved the white stock in our Southern States. But what will happen when men and women of backward stocks begin to permeate the South in the future? Would there be a check on the admixture of low types of white women with Negro men? Would not the infusion of alien blood, among both whites and Negroes in the South, act as a medium to break down the racial barriers below the Mason and Dixon line? Americans can retain their race purity only by relegating mixed bloods to the remote stock with which some individuals will inevitably mix. But herein lies the insidious aspect of admixture of Americans with so-called whites of alien strain. For the lower strata of American folk will intermarry with the newcomers, as a result of which the swarthy white types will gradually creep into the higher stocks and a mixed race will result.

Even people of superior race are not sufficiently educated as yet to realize or care about the welfare of future generations, where economic condition or some other temporary factor is alleged the main requisite. As a rule, the lowest element of the superior stock mixes with the higher element of the inferior stock, so that the heritage of the progeny is not greatly improved, in any case. To err is human in the case of inexperienced youth. We can protect our sons and daughters by a stringent immigration policy that will assure homogeneity to future generations.<sup>143</sup>

"What if our immigration laws should succeed perfectly in excluding the physically and mentally unsound? . . . In physical and mental soundness there is no indication of the qualities which we must have if we are not to be overtaken by the dead level of mediocrity that



already claims nine-tenths of the world's peoples . . . If we are to sustain the quality of our heritage and give permanency to the advantage we now have in the world's affairs, we must begin afresh with the conception that every drop of imported blood containing less of promise than our native blood lowers our capacity to resist degeneration. . . .

"Why do we force to abnormal proportions the development of our resources by importing hordes of inferior peoples, only to have them plague . . . us when lessening raw material shall have returned us to more normal conditions? Is it because we have no vision of that comparatively near future? Then what of a thousand years hence, or ten thousand? Time is coming upon the human race with centuries still unnumbered, whether we reckon with them or not. . . . Why load the business of a century upon the shoulders of each generation, when the centuries are without end and the earth's resources are limited? . . .

"The movement for conservation accomplished chiefly the saving of lumber forests, for that was the failure nearest impending. But forests can be grown again. The prospective exhaustion within a few generations of irreplaceable ore, coal and oil deposits seems to carry no special appeal. Then why should Americans be expected to worry over the prospect of racial failure? . . .

"With us progress and permanence do not seem to have reached a working agreement. . . . Meanwhile, vision of the future is shortened by the brilliancy of the present, and deliberate living is becoming a lost art."<sup>144</sup>

Pure races have proved their genius over and over again. Mongrelism is but an experiment, to say the least. Have Americans of the present age the right, although admitting that it is for them to choose, to induce precarious conditions that throw into the balance the

birthright of our descendants? Is our duty to a class of immigrants that have already proved their aversion to American institutions, or to our own unborn who would otherwise bid fair to carry on our Nordic heritage?

The continuation of the immigration of certain classes from Southern and Eastern Europe must inevitably result in one of two contingencies. Either these utterly alien types will remain distinct and perhaps discordant components indefinitely, or else the new groups will be mixed with the Nordic native stock to form a mongrel and, from present indications, a retrograde American type.

We are willing to fight great wars and sacrifice our young blood to keep out the foreign hosts of destruction; and yet we are unwilling to renounce luxury and the cheap labor of the alien invaders in order to protect the race purity and hereditary genius of future Americans!

## CHAPTER VIII

### THE IMMIGRATION PROBLEM

Upon the country's present immigration policy depends the future of the people of the United States. For it is the care we shall take in selecting our immigrants that will determine what blood in future years shall mingle with the blood of our descendants in generations to come.

Perhaps the two factors that stand out above all others are: (1) that if two races be not of the same basic stock, according to the law of God and nature the more numerous, or in the case of equally numerous, the more primitive, or the more adapted race will breed out the other, but only after an indefinite era of mongrelism which may disintegrate the mixed element altogether; and (2) that our immigration includes in the main, not the higher type intellectual classes from Southern and Eastern Europe, but the mongrel submerged populations, the very dregs of European humanity.

In general it may be considered that mankind's period of expansion is over; and that from now on we must face the problem of restrictional evolution. Already the bugbear of unemployment is becoming as important a phase of our industrial question in this country as it is in Europe, and our natural rate of increase of population is now comparable to that of the crowded European states.<sup>145</sup>

In the decade leading up to 1920 our center of population moved barely nine miles westward of Bloomington, Indiana, where it had been located in the 1910 Cen-

sus, demonstrating that the rush to the cities, particularly by Southern and Eastern Europeans, has betokened a slackening in the pioneering spirit of the West of years gone by.<sup>146</sup> This appears to be true notwithstanding we consider that war industries attracted many people from the farms to the cities who are now known to be returning to the land.

While it is undoubtedly the case that millions of unassimilable aliens cannot have the obliterating effect they might have had upon the Colonial population of 3,000,000 three centuries ago, yet they are rapidly becoming a powerful force through the strength of their voting bodies. Moreover, their already great numbers naturally serve as an unceasing advertising means to attract their less fortunate kind. The members of the "new" immigration lack self-reliance very noticeably; and it is actually the nationals in the United States who induce immigration of an undesirable nature, for the former advise their relatives and friends and promise them aid upon their arrival, but for which prospective immigrants might be averse to confronting the difficulties of a new environment. Even the contract labor law can be, and is, nullified by labor employers offering money to their employees for the purpose of bringing additional cheap labor to America.

Free entry to the cheapest laboring people from Southern and Eastern Europe actually prevents immigration of the more assimilable classes from Northwestern Europe; for the latter know that they can get better protection from cheap labor competition in their own countries than in the cheap labor industries of America.

From present indications our future immigration, unless we take protective measures, will become a conglomerate horde, limited only by the accommodations of the steamship lines. Nor may we hope for a future

emigration, as there was in the past, in the case of Southern and Eastern Europeans, equal to two-fifths of the immigration.

In some respects, however, we may study the past immigration flow as an indication of what may happen in the future, providing there is no restriction. Thus, as the writer has shown in previous chapters, the immigrant streams of the various nationalities flow in courses remarkably consistent, in that the rivulet of humanity from a foreign source begins very slowly but gains in momentum, until the flood bursts in upon us. Thus a knowledge of the subject of immigration was never greater than at this time when millions of unadaptable aliens are preparing to push in.

What is the high tide of immigrant labor that the United States can sustain? Even if a surplus of cheap labor should eventually curb further immigration, might not these swarthy foreigners meanwhile crowd the land to the utter obliteration of the homogeneous American stock? Have we not, as Leonard Wood so aptly puts it, "all the sand in our cement that we can stand?"

Under our recent immigration laws unassimilable immigrants could be drawn from areas included in Eastern and Southern Europe, Latin America, Eastern Asia and Africa, with a combined population of some 500,000,000, constituting an unlimited source. Moreover, these people have not in general the brains or the ability to make the most of natural advantages at home, and as a result they would come in greater proportionate numbers than in the case of the Northwest Europeans. The latter, by the way, will be drawn from Northwest Europe, Canada and a few small colonies, with the pitifully small total, comparatively speaking, of some 150,000,000.

It is to be expected that great migrations of restless peoples will take place in the future. We have already



restricted the Chinese and Hindus to Asia; and we are about to restrict Japan to that continent also. The Slavs have the vast undeveloped resources of Siberia to exploit. The Latins have the Barbary coast and all of Latin America as an outlet. But what have the overcrowded people of Northwest Europe, if not North America and Australia, as lands to be saved for them alone? Even the Germans should be welcomed to North America and the British Colonies, lest they become embittered and swarm into the Russian Empire, where they may become a far greater menace than before as capable leaders of the Slavic myriads. But that is another story.

Today the United States can welcome the choice, the pick of the inhabitants of Northwest Europe, the farmers and others of a desirable nature. Yet we are discouraging such immigration by our present inadequately regulated laws that cheapen labor and frighten away the skilled workers of Europe.

The organization of the Jewish people in America exercises its influence by gaining priority of passage accommodations for the least self-reliant of the Eastern European Jews. Offices in Europe systematize Jewish immigration to America and encourage the same. It has been necessary to fit many ships with "kosher" kitchens to cater to the thousands of Jewish emigrants to America.

The hundreds of thousands of women arrived since the Armistice of 1918 point toward a large permanent inflow from Eastern and Southern Europe. Also, this offers various new complications in the problem of our immigration from those regions. Thus many Slav and Italian women are now coming over with their husbands, not as additions to the labor forces, but to keep house and, incidentally, rear large families. Many Greek, South Italian and other Southern European women now



reach this country under the barbarous custom of "parental arrangement" to marry men they have never seen, a form of legalized prostitution that our immigration authorities are compelled to countenance for lack of laws against such procedure. The Report of the Commissioner-General of Immigration for 1920 says, in connection with this: "It may not be inappropriate to call attention to the fact that . . . . alleged laws of Spain and Portugal . . . . permit a party to a proposed marriage, native of either of those countries, who may be in a foreign jurisdiction to name by power of authority an attorney in fact to represent such party in a marriage ceremony to be consummated in the home country in the absence of bride or groom as the case may be. Proceedings have arisen in the Bureau wherein alleged brides have made application for admission to the United States to join alleged husbands; thus as the 'proxy bride' experience on the Pacific coast is about to cease, it is possible to have it continue on the Atlantic side with the probable addition of a 'proxy groom' attachment." It has been charged that girls from Armenia, Palestine and Turkey come to join wealthy aliens in the United States, some of whom are married, but others perhaps forcibly detained in veritable harems. Undoubtedly the willingness of these Southern European and Near Eastern women to emigrate to the United States is due to the scarcity of marriageable men in their home lands, from losses in the World War.

But there is a far more significant phase in the gain of the female sex among our immigrants. It lies in the fact that in the past the rate of increase of the native stock has kept pace with the foreign stock only because of the disproportionate number of males, and the scarcity of women and children, among most of the elements of our immigration from Southern and Eastern Europe.

The significance of the changes which have come to pass in this connection is very apparent. Incidentally, it may be added that hitherto the net results of the rate of increase of population has been actually in favor of the native Americans, in spite of the fecundity of the women of foreign stock; indeed every two or three native children lived to become adults, marry and raise children of their own, whereas the majority, perhaps, of the average five or six children of the immigrant mother were doomed to die before reaching maturity from lack of nutriment or of intelligent care, from disease, or owing to the dangers of city streets or unwholesome surroundings.<sup>147</sup> Now, however, the institution of hygienic organizations in our great cities will actually accentuate the problem by saving infant lives at birth and in adolescence.<sup>148</sup> Of course the decrease in the death rate may compensate, or more than compensate, for the drop in the birth rate among civilized folk; that is, the net crop of children may be greater in each generation. (Havelock Ellis.) But among the prolific and less civilized races sanitary methods may reduce the death rate long before the birth rate is reduced by natural conditions. We need not cast aside our sense of charity to comprehend the truth of this assertion.

The biological aspect of the immigration problem is by far the most important of all the questions involved. For, as explained in the previous chapter, we must not only share America with the immigrant of remote race stock, but we must allow his children and grandchildren ad infinitum to marry with ours. It may be a matter of centuries, but the futile character of the caste system in India is sufficient evidence of the injury that will be done the race in decades or centuries to come. Mixture of races of genius with races of mediocre character may somewhat uplift the lower stock, but will inevitably blot

out the essential quality of the higher. "President Roosevelt was one of the first of our statesmen who looked steadily beyond his day and generation to the more distant future. He inaugurated, or at least gave impetus to, a great movement for the conservation of the natural resources of this country and he maintained that selective immigration was second only to conservation in its importance for the welfare of future generations."<sup>149</sup>

So must we all of us "look beyond" our own passing generation, prompted by unselfish and devoted patriotism and goodwill toward mankind.

## CHAPTER IX

### THE EXPLOITER AND THE SENTIMENTALIST REFUTED

It is a favorite topic of the anti-restrictionists that the "Latins" and "Slavs" will bring a greater degree of musical and artistic ability to the too practical and materialistic Anglo-Saxons.

This is a fallacy pure and simple. Art and music attain an exalted level only after centuries of national existence. In the race for wealth and natural resources the advanced nations of the world have neglected their art and literature of the past. Even the more primitive of the European nations are fast turning from their ancient art. That there will some day be another renaissance is quite likely, but it will be the advanced races of the world that will bring this about, even as the descendants of Germanic invaders probably introduced the Italian renaissance in North Italy. England was only unfortunate in that her rural inhabitants forsook their remarkable handicraft to become manufacturers and workers about a hundred years before the peasantry of the continent. She attained world dominion, but fell behind in music and the arts. Moreover, her festivals of singing and folk dances were banished by the austere Roundheads. But who can say that Chaucer's England, Henry VIII's, Elizabeth's, or Jacobean England did not rival the Continent in both culture and art?

While England, Holland, France, Spain and Portugal were devoting their energies to the conquest of the New

World, Germany, Russia and Italy were developing a musical consciousness.

Great commercial and manufacturing nations must subsidize art and music if they would have the latter survive. Neither America nor present-day England, Germany, France, nor even Italy, any longer encourages or produces such geniuses as those of the past. It is certain, too, both from contemplation of the past and signs for the future, that the introduction of cheap manual laborers from Italy and elsewhere does not produce artistic fecundity in America. Sufficiently paradoxical remains the fact that the nation becomes more unspiritual and less artistic as cheap labor creates a superficial kind of wealth that breeds the fetish of luxury and ease among the higher classes, or at least accelerates the mad rush toward materialism.

We must not infer from all this that no art is being produced in America. But the greatest musicians and artists here are either native Americans or else are mainly recruited from among the North Italians and the higher classes generally of the Slavs, Jews or Latins. And the examples of brilliant Italians, Jews and Slavs are not to be judged as indications of what can be accomplished if we educate the uncouth and stagnant lower strata of Europe.<sup>150</sup>

The general terms of "foreign-born" and "foreign parentage" are false conceptions eagerly seized upon by anti-exclusionists to prove the achievements of the alien stock. As a matter of fact, the restrictionists are not directing their efforts against the foreign stock, but against the worst and least assimilable strangers. The average arrival born in Northwest Europe will in general be absorbed within the homogeneous American stock, whereas the average person of American birth, but Slavic, Italian or Polish-Jewish ancestry, is un-

likely to be absorbed into the American stock.

In an editorial of the "Nation" on March 26, 1914, the question was propounded as to whether "the large immigration of today will not, half a century hence, look as harmless and even desirable as do now the Irish immigrants of 1845-55."

In answer to this, Henry P. Fairchild replied as follows:

"It is not at all certain that our grandfathers disliked and dreaded the Irish as much as we fear the Slavs and Italians . . . . I have failed to find any widespread sentiment against the Irish comparable to the restrictionist agitation of to-day. . . . The antipathy was not against the Irish as such, nor was it against a degrading competition in the economic field. It was against paupers, criminals, diseased persons, and Roman Catholics.

• • • • •  
 "This argument always assumes that none of the evils which our forebears dreaded in connection with the Irish immigration has, in fact, materialized. . . . But there is evidence that the Irish are responsible for more than their share of our troubles. . . .

"The one reason why the evil effects . . . . are not more widespread and prominent than they are, is that this very agitation of our forefathers . . . . had its effect."

Many well-meaning humanitarians, utterly ignorant of racial truths, appeal to the sentimental spirit of square dealing that is characteristic of the Anglo-Saxon. They wrongly analyze the words, "we hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal," as indicative of racial equality; forgetting all the time that the signers of the Declaration of Independence were many of them slave-holders and regarded the Indians with anything but a sense of equality! These words were essen-



tially of political, not racial significance. Politicians among us have been able to misinterpret the above phrase so as to lull the American people into a calm and complacent resignation, as ignorant foreigners have received the vote and now threaten our institutions. Thus do the politicians operate on the principle that the yet unborn native Americans have no vote and that their welfare in future years is therefore not to be considered.

Another favorite term of the anti-restrictionist is "Americanization." But unfortunately no two men have the same ideas as to what constitutes the Americanizing process, that miraculous cure for all ills. Nor have the attempts at "Americanization" as yet produced any noticeable biological change in the character of our newcomers from Southern and Eastern Europe.

A Frenchman thus outlines our problem of "Americanization": "One of the American problems arising from immigration . . . . is that of "Americanizing" or, if you like, nationalizing, or absorbing or assimilating, these numerous immigrants. . . . The Americans, who are never discouraged and have a certain child-like candor of mind, have figured out and affirmed that with money and organized effort they can succeed. . . . What will it be, this ready-made Americanization? . . . Will it not often serve as camouflage? . . . To Americanize indiscriminately, above all to concentrate only on that end, will increase the number of Americans; but it may well lower the average level of their intellectual capacity and equipment."<sup>151</sup>

It has been said that the public schools work wonderful changes in the alien children.<sup>152</sup> That may be so, but on the other hand, foreign children, reared in laxity and moral indifference, oftentimes poison the minds of American schoolchildren and students in ways very evident in the native American children of our great cities.

Even our colleges are not free from alien radical infection. Incidentally, it is the case that the public schools often breed in the children of immigrants contempt for the manual labor of their parents. And one cannot deny that individuals of the second generation of the foreign ingredient are apt to fall under the influence of leaders of undesirable character.

We should be careful how we encourage immigrants to abandon their language and habits, or to wean the second generation away from the race life of its forefathers. For it exhibits various undermining tendencies of a too rapid swerving from the teachings of the parents. The American-born children despise their parents, conceive license as the semblance of freedom, and become the criminals, in many cases, of the foreign quarter. Obtaining high marks and absorbing information in school does not effect Americanization. It is in the home and in social intercourse in the American community that the essence of patriotism is absorbed.

Whenever the United States passes through industrial hard times which throw some two or three million men out of work, such anti-restrictionist organizations as the Inter-racial Council and the like prate of "distribution of immigrants." Fortunately, few of us need be informed that the average immigrant from Southern and Eastern Europe drifts to the cities or industrial districts. And when he is directed to farm communities, he does not, as a general rule, "stay put." Nay, he will change his occupation to suit his fancy.<sup>153</sup> Thus it is a question whether the "Division of Distribution" of the Immigration Bureau can do more than somewhat relieve the congestion of the foreign quarters in New York, Chicago and a few other large cities. The Southern or Eastern European usually arrives in America at the behest of a relative or friend. He will naturally gravitate

toward a group speaking his mother tongue. Then, the formation of many small lingual communities in remote districts of the West would probably lead eventually to inbreeding, if not actual decadence. As a matter of fact, regarding Southern and Eastern Europeans of the lower class, the city slums afford a far greater influence in the process of Americanization than do the isolated country districts or the segregated mining and industrial districts in the country. For in the cities the newcomers learn through the moving pictures; their children attend school; and the more intelligent of them frequent the libraries or attend public lectures.

It is a sad contingency that the very foreigners to whom we gave welcome are now battering down the time-honored ideas of equal opportunity and freedom of action within reasonable limits. It is a matter of grave concern that native Americans are now forced to unionize in order to protect themselves against foreign unskilled labor.

The millions of the new immigrant stock in our population are already a greater menace than we had suspected in the past, if only because of the propaganda of certain radicals among them, small in numbers but exercising a tremendous sway among an ignorant and easily dominated alien population. American initiative and fair play has been lost through the agency of these "wolf-pack" organizations. How fortunate that the American working man, guided by the American Federation of Labor, at last sees that his salvation lies in restricting the sort of immigration that lowers his standards of living! However, the time will arrive when the labor union will be made responsible for damage or impairment of freedom of action, while the employers will be compelled to arbitrate with employees, resulting in setting aside much of the evil of present day competition.

American labor cannot and will not compete with the foreigner, particularly when it loses social caste by doing so; but, endowed with a full measure of respectability, the native worker will generally meet the demand for labor, as he still tills the fields by the sweat of his brow. The reason why Americans refuse to do such tasks as railway building, street laying or sewer building is not because the work, in itself, is menial or below standard.<sup>154</sup> Certainly such tasks are no more disagreeable than the mining of precious metals, in which many of native stock are engaged. It is because Southern and Eastern European immigrants have allowed exploiters to insist upon an inadequate wage-scale and to characterize such labor as "dirty work." In consequence the somewhat self-respecting American refuses to lose caste by working beside the low-grade foreigner, preferring to take lower wages to secure a position that is not frowned upon by superficial convention.<sup>155</sup> Analogously, the nouveaux riches have, with their superior attitude, driven the native American house girl from wholesome home surroundings to a make-free environment in the factories.

In pioneer days the best people in the community did their own "dirty work"—and thought nothing of it. Today vast armies of private servants, butlers, footmen, and other menials are imported to confound and disrupt the workings of democracy. In the future the foreigners will not "force up" the American in the social scale. Formerly they forced him to seek freedom of action in the West, but now that public lands are scarce, the native must be gradually obliterated—unless immigration of undesirables is stopped. The idle rich alone are pushed out at the financial pinnacle, and the capitalists gain by the poorly paid toil of the immigrants. But the great body of native Americans are now suffering from the

effects of being caught between two grinding forces, and only the awakening of the backbone of the nation, and its insistence upon radically improved immigration laws, will insure the future welfare of our Republic. Under different social and economic conditions the country can support vastly more people in a higher state of social well-being than at present; but now we are by degrees reducing the average common wealth of individuals.<sup>156</sup>

We must do more of our own work. We are depending upon lower and lower classes of humanity as cheap labor. For it is inevitable that the children of Mediterranean, Alpine and Semitic immigrants will rise in the social scale through education; and, moreover, newly arrived individuals of these stocks will soon refuse to work for wages that are spurned by their co-nationals who preceded them. Already this condition is becoming apparent. Then will the time come when we shall have to call upon Asiatic coolies to do our work, after all, unless of course our schoolchildren are taught to cast aside superficialities and to respect the work of the hands. But that cannot be done until the importation of low-class labor and backward human types is prohibited by our government.<sup>157</sup>

If the speculative activities of steamship companies and monopolies had been controlled, the American people would not be dependent to-day. It is for the farmers and laborers particularly to resist the efforts of the sentimentalists and exploiters; for the native workers must realize, as many already do, that men of Nordic race cannot survive the disastrous competition of races economically and socially of a lower standard. Only when selective immigration has become a fact will the American people be willing, and indeed glad, to do the necessary tasks, at the same time eliminating much of the "non-essential" variety of jobs.



In the past immigrants of an undesirable and unasimilable character have recompensed us, to some extent perhaps, in building railroads for the opening up of the country. Now, however, our main transcontinental railways are laid, and the fertile farmlands of the West are occupied. In other words, we are rapidly arriving at an economic situation comparable to that of Europe. Indeed, further immigration to an extreme will be a steady drift toward the over-populated condition of an India or a China.

The farmers of the Middle West do not want ignorant foreigners, nor, in fact, would the latter ever forsake the congested communities to which they flock. The National Commission on Industrial Relations went so far as to declare that the existing state of industrial unrest is caused by the great mass of non-English-speaking workers who prevent the advance of good relations between employer and employee.

Our ancestors were moved by feelings of economic interest to import and keep slaves, rather than by the interest in the race problem they were willing to their descendants. Must there be a civil or class war to teach present-day Americans that they are creating a more sinister race problem in the futile attempt to relieve a "labor shortage" which, paradoxically, does not exist? Democratic society will come to an end if we make life increasingly luxurious at the expense of the decrease of the fit and, by immigration, the increase of the unfit. As immigration augments, economic necessity inevitably forces the present great middle class (the salvation of democracy) to limit the number of its progeny. It is very significant that by far the smallest birth rate of the native stock is in those very districts of the East where the natives are in contact and competition with large immigrant groups. Indeed, if the native stock through-



out the country mirrored this phenomenon we should, like the American Indians, be a "disappearing race." Should the drift to the cities persist, the condition would become more accentuated than ever.

Sentimentalists continue to call America the "asylum for the oppressed." But why should the alien races of Europe be admitted within our gates any more than the starving millions of Chinese or other Asiatic coolies? The majority from Southern and Eastern Europe are hardly less remote from the Nordics in race than the Orientals. Of course, the Mediterraneans, Alpines and Ashkenazim Jews all have infusions of Aryan, or rather Nordic blood, but even the Japanese, Hindus and other Orientals have a slight Caucasian strain—and yet we regard them as unassimilable.<sup>158</sup> Indeed the Chinese and Japanese are culturally superior to many of the peoples who enter at our Eastern ports. In other words, precedent for the exclusion of foreign labor is found in the case of our measures against Chinese, Japanese and other Orientals.

In spite of chance instances, no more frequent than our own lynching outrages against the Negroes, the days of autocracy and religious persecution have passed in Europe. Moreover, why should America be the sole "asylum," or better still, charitable institution for the "oppressed"? The sentimentalists do not seem to consider that the Southern and Eastern Europeans are welcomed with open arms by the rich countries of South America, vast in territory, but sparsely settled as yet. What is more, the standard of living in those nations is very similar to that of the people from Southern and Eastern Europe, so that no social or economic problems would result to said nations. The sentimentalists do not consider that the Ostjuden, or Eastern European Jews, can eventually go to Palestine, where they may

find unlimited opportunity in a developing nation, surrounded by immense territories that will also need development in the future. Besides, Brazil, in which country dwells a mosaic of races, heartily welcomes Jewish settlers, and recently 2,500 Ukranian Jews accepted an offer of free transportation by that country. If the South Italians and other so-called Latins emulate the spirit of the pioneer which was a marked characteristic of the Spanish Conquistadors, they will enter the partially developed regions of North Africa, and all Latin America. Lastly, the Slavs have huge and rich Siberia for a working ground. Surplus populations of low grade should seek their salvation in the plain living of the world's yet unexploited tracts, rather than in a land of luxury such as the United States, where they are social outcasts. Every race is the "chosen of God," but He has "appointed unto them the bonds of their habitation."

Anti-Semitism in America is a misnomer. No question of race inferiority is involved in the case of better-class Jews. Among us no dogma obtains of one race being better, or farther advanced, than another. Here the question is one of profound hereditary racial differences, augmented by divergences in religion, ethics, politics, economics or other effects of a more or less hereditary nature. The true Jew values his homogeneity as fully as does the true Nordic. The truth of the matter is that the Jews as a whole are not to be regarded as a race but as a sect. Races as diversified and remote profess Judaism to-day as those found within the Christian faith. Thus discrimination against one class of Jewish immigrants can no more be regarded as repudiation of all Jews, or as anti-Semitism, than that discrimination against American Negroes within the United States can be held an outcry against all Christians.

Nahum Sokolov, President of the Executive Zionist

Committee, suggested that the people of America should obviate the problem of a vast influx of poverty-stricken Ukrainian Jews by organizing a plan to transport these Jews to Palestine as soon as possible.<sup>159</sup> The Polish and Russian Jews no longer need America as the sole haven from persecution. A rich and powerful Jewry now invites them to aid in rejuvenating Palestine, and if any of the innate resourcefulness and application to the soil of Jewish forefathers survives in the latter's mixed type, these Jews will accept the opportunity in preference to seeking the role of middlemen in the United States.

Always we are hearing the human appeal that aliens in the United States long to bring over their relatives to join them. That is perhaps a natural desire. Yet, as far as the United States is concerned, it would be infinitely better that the "relatives" now here return to the land whence they came, than that a constant and vast stream of such from the old country should continually aggravate our problem.<sup>160</sup>

The most objectionable classes of the "new" immigration are rapidly breaking down American institutions and honorable business methods. The New York law courts are jammed with foreign litigants. It is a matter of debate whether the business trickery of these lower class elements is the cause or the result of centuries of class or religious persecution. But the fact is that this trait has become so ingrained that one may doubt whether it could be eradicated for generations. Many are, or always have been, devoid of any sense of obligation to the community that shelters them. In many cases the second generation, if not the first generation itself, openly flaunts the doctrine of "easy money" in a country of lenient bankruptcy laws.

The true Jew resents the self-centered and encroach-

ing tactics of his uncouth co-religionists, for the former knows that his own race, the intellectual element that has accomplished superb achievements, must suffer from vituperation as a result. The Jews of comparatively pure race even forbid association of their sons and daughters with those they term the "kikes," in the knowledge that the standards of living and morality are lower among the latter. Even in the churches the two disparate branches of like worship are kept separated and distinct. Jewish charitable institutions are filled to overflowing with the race of Polish and Russian Jews, but the burden of support and maintenance must be borne by the German Jewish community.

It is for the greater part the defective who makes the slum, and when a normal person originates in the slum, he seeks the outer world. Thus a large number of those sprung from the tenements have improved their condition in the outer world. Indeed a considerable amount of wealth is brought into the country by immigrants, such as the Jews from Eastern Europe, whose coming is essentially a "family immigration." Unfortunately the possession of money cannot buy culture or the assimilative quality, and hence even the Polish and Russian Jews of the better class tend to congregate. The owning of wealth appears to give full play to a love of profiteering in real estate and in other directions. The New York State rent laws to curb profiteering of landlords are a case in point, in which we are forced to despotize our institutions in order to deal with new citizens not capable or willing to support representative government. Another trend, as the result of too sudden riches without a corresponding amount of culture or morals, is the decadence of the American stage in so far as it applies to art and modesty. Anti-Semitism in America is a pitiful commentary upon the failure of Gentiles to make a study of

anthropology and history. But it is a still more pathetic instance of the failure of the Jewish people in America to guard their own future welfare.

There are, to be sure, backward elements among the present Nordic population of the United States. The most notable example are the poor whites of the Cumberland Mountains of Kentucky and Tennessee.<sup>161</sup> Many of the latter are the descendants of bond servants brought over by English planters during the Colonial period, which may account somewhat for their retardation.<sup>162</sup> Perhaps their shooting affrays were carried into the Great West, where it is supposed that in those early years they contributed "rather more than their share of the train robbers, horse thieves and bad men."<sup>163</sup> However, we cannot entirely attribute the character of these Appalachian mountaineers to the fact that some of them were descended from indentured bondsmen, for quantities of them, according to their names, are descendants of the ancient feudists of the English-Scotch Border. Indeed the highlanders of Appalachia are to-day the most homogeneous of all Americans. Out of a total population of some three million, not more than perhaps 25,000 are of foreign birth.<sup>164</sup> Probably their remoteness from civilization, poor food, losses through the departure of the best blood and in-breeding (the latter a cause as well as an effect) have together brought about the estate of these people.<sup>165</sup>

It should not be forgotten that there are potential traits that only need to be brought out in these folk of pure Saxon or Anglian type.<sup>166</sup> As much was proved through the part they played in the settlement of the Middle West, by way of Kentucky, Tennessee and Missouri, thence up the Missouri, and down the Santa Fé trail. More recently, the record of the mountaineer regiments in the World War may not be overlooked.



We must observe, too, that their travel and experiences during the conflict have brought a new viewpoint to the young men of the mountains, which bids fair to usher in a new era for the upland community.<sup>167</sup> But to admit that there are retarded elements among our native stock is not gainsaying the fact (as experience has shown by the preponderance of foreign stock in our jails and almshouses) that there will be a magnitudinous increase of such factors through the entrance into this country of a low grade of human material. Such decadent native communities, few and far between, merely serve to illustrate the dangers of scattering throughout the land units of unassimilable strangers of alien tongue and customs.<sup>168</sup>

Manpower in time of war is another distorted plea of the anti-restrictionist. This is the old tribal instinct aroused by fear of powerful neighbors. Intellectuality, not manpower, will rule the world. Already overpopulated, earth would be far better off were its population but half of the present. Famine, disease, labor unrest and anarchy are in general results of over-population. The rank of a nation to-day is not measured by the numerical superiority of its people. Russia has an immense population. But its masses do not direct the affairs of the nation; nor did they even properly protect their country from threatened invasion during the World War.<sup>169</sup> In order to be self-governing in the genuine sense, a people must have hereditary moral and mental quality. It was the high character of Nordic founders which established and preserved our country. Without that, can any nation survive through trial and tribulation?

An editorial of the New York Herald (October 8 1920) hails the fact that the 1920 Census found a fewer number of inhabitants in the United States than had been



expected, and said, very cogently, "We have in quantity all that is necessary for a while in our population. In quality that population surpasses the people of any other land. We can now afford to let our number care for itself and give our energy to the maintenance of the high standard of citizenship to which, through the wisdom and labor of our predecessors, we have attained."<sup>170</sup>

There is no necessity of trying to fill the world's waste places as quickly as possible.<sup>171</sup> Some of the world's riches should be left for future generations. In the endeavor to keep our stomachs supplied, we must not lose sight of the fact that the purpose of our country is not merely to feed and to propagate as many human beings as possible. Not by its unmeasured profit in trade, but by its moral, intellectual and ethical code, is a great nation recognized. The cry of the exploiter of cheap labor is the loudest in behalf of the open door to immigration. And albeit his plea is unsound, it rings with the call of necessity, inasmuch as an impossible situation has been created by the influx of the "new" immigration. As, for example, the Cornish and Welsh miners have been forced out of the mines by the Polaks and Magyars, so the latter will be crowded by the newcomers of a still lower standard.

The writer believes with others, however, that a limited system of indentured immigration would come nearest to solving the problem of cheap labor; at least until that time arrives when machinery will be called upon to do the work now done by the immigrant. Each immigrant would be catalogued, photographed, finger-printed and placed under the supervision of the government, precisely as with our soldiers in the army.

Perhaps improved standards in the mining and industrial communities would soon begin to attract back again the English, Irish, Scotch, Welsh or American miners

and workers, but the system of indenture would at least fill a temporary need. At the completion of his indenture period, the laborer from Southern and Eastern Europe could be sent back to the land of his fathers, which would hardly be out of place in considering the fact that these swarthy aliens have quite generally been "birds of passage" in past years. Thus immigration would be fitted to the needs of industry, but at the same time our racial character would not be impaired. Indentured labor can be employed very efficaciously, as, for example, in the case of some 3,000 Bahaman Negroes and 13,000 Porto Ricans (the latter not aliens, however) who were brought to the United States during the World War to meet the emergency, and who were later transported to their homes. The United States can import Mexicans at certain seasons, keep them in well guarded communities, and then, at the expiration of their period of indenture, return them to Mexico. The petition of Louisiana that it be permitted to bring in Mexican labor for planting and harvesting is significant in this connection.

Furthermore, it is a question whether the potential qualities of the American Negro have been adequately sought and directed. The number of Negroes in gainful occupations may be all too few at present, but careful supervision and distribution would work wonders. Social workers, both white and colored, are now having some success in arousing the Negroes to the importance of taking advantage of certain industrial opportunities. Indeed the future of the Negro may move in this direction.<sup>172</sup>

One of the main solutions of the labor problem is, however, the proper distribution and co-ordination of labor. "It is a known fact that while millions of immigrant laborers have been entering the country since 1900, there have been workmen idle on the streets of practically

every city and town in America in every day, every month and every year, because no adequate means existed for bringing men to jobs and jobs to men."<sup>173</sup>

Undoubtedly the great corporations and industrial concerns, as well as the milling and mining combines have driven away American, British, Irish and other Northwest European labor, and can now, therefore, employ more Slavs, Magyars and Latins than they are able to get. But remember that most of these concerns are devoting their energies to the production of raw material, much of which must be shipped out of the country. Yet the less raw material leaving the country the better, and as unskilled labor is used for that purpose, the less we have of the latter the better for the nation. In Germany common labor becomes steadily scarcer. And yet that nation of skilled labor was able to export before the War of 1914 goods that showed four times the skill workmanship and consequent value of goods leaving the United States.<sup>174</sup> Which goes to prove that scarcity of labor encourages, necessitates, engenders labor-saving devices. It has been estimated that machinery already operating in the United States does the work of 3,000,000,000 men.<sup>175</sup> Therefore it is obvious that if immigration is sufficiently checked, there would result so rapid a substitution of labor-saving machinery that the demand for unskilled labor would fall off and, in its place, there would rise a greater demand for skilled labor. In the main, whatsoever be lost through lack of manpower can be made up by the doubling of machine power. Within the ten years antedating the World War, for example, the National Lead Company, through labor-saving devices it installed, was enabled to cut down the previously required common labor by 25 per cent.<sup>176</sup> In every line of endeavor, in fact, the value of labor-saving is being appreciated more and more from day to

day. But as long as men can do the work as cheaply as machinery there is no incentive to make an investment in helpful devices, unless their actual want is felt as a result of the falling off in the number of the number of cheap laborers arriving from Europe.<sup>177</sup> Unskilled labor has often resented innovations, and has thus played into the hands of the importers and exploiters of unskilled aliens. Yet it is an undeniable fact that American labor has actually benefitted by the introduction of such labor-saving devices as Arkwright's spinning jenny, the steam engine, the telegraph, the steam-shovel, the telephone, the taxicab, and an innumerable variety of other inventions. The American skilled workman comes into his own as labor-saving devices increase and arduous unskilled activities decrease. Skilled labor will insure America's future prosperity; but unskilled labor in further quantity will seal our country's doom. With immigration curtailed and with millions of men taken for war's activities from 1914 to 1918, business and civil life in America went on with remarkably small disturbance, thus proving the fallacy of a genuine need for unskilled labor.

If our lawmakers are unaware of the undercurrent of unrest in this country to-day, it is time for them to wake up before the very institutions of our forefathers are threatened. The time is passed for evasions. The working man insists, and rightly, on liveable wages. The plutocratic set must forego its mad orgy of waste and luxury before the poor man is deprived of the necessities of life. The American working man is unwilling to be ground by high rents while the wealthy and profiteers benefit through his untoward condition. Even the alien of the "new" immigration is becoming insistent in his demands for better living conditions and the "square deal." Equally, however, should the labor unions be

held as strictly accountable for their actions as the great corporations, particularly as regards incendiarism and other forms of property destruction, and the infringement of the right of the open shop.

It must be admitted that our literacy test is no more than a makeshift in the solution of the immigration problem. It keeps out many sturdy farmers and at the same time admits some of our worst anarchists. Indeed, while we are deporting one alien radical, thousands of potential anarchists are entering the country within a day. The literary test probably served a purpose in a small degree to reduce our immigration, but its operation does not effect what was intended and the law has thus become obsolete. The mental tests used in the United States Army during the war revealed not only a surprising amount of illiteracy, but, what is far worse, an alarmingly low level of intelligence. This system of mental tests, which has been proven most successful, should immediately replace the literacy test as a means of determining the moral and intellectual capacity of our immigrants. All persons falling below the grade of "average" intelligence should be excluded from our shores; for it is this class which constitutes a great biological menace to future generations in this country.<sup>178</sup>

"Emigration since the war from the great European emigration centers presents all the evils of the prewar immigration plus several brand-new evils. . . . It will be vouched for by newspaper men, by consuls, by military attachés, by representatives of the United States Government sent to Europe for purposes of observation, by the employees of steamship lines, by United States public health officials, by the representatives of purely American relief organizations, by business men who are not racially affiliated with the undesirable immigrants, and by legations and embassies of the United States.



"American consuls, American diplomatic officers, government observers and American newspapermen are in Europe for the purpose of obtaining accurate and unbiased information for the guidance of the American government and the American people. They are trained to gather facts and to draw deductions, and they are selected for their ability to do so. These people are universally and wholeheartedly agreed that immigration as it exists to-day is a menace to the well-being of America, that an emergency of a serious nature confronts and will continue to confront the nation until immigration is intelligently and energetically restricted and selected, and that the persons in America who wish and permit it to continue are, to put it crudely and bluntly, either pitifully uninformed as to conditions or are suffering from warped judgment and severely twisted Americanism or are just plain crazy. If in their agreement they are wrong they are the largest body of trained observers which was ever mistaken on any subject whatever. . . .

"We are not obligated to take in these people any more than we are obligated to dig half of the unexploded shells out of the battlefields of Europe and bury them in our own farmlands for our own plowshares and harrows to explode. It would, of course, be a nice thing to do; but only a madman would suggest it. Yet the continuance of the present immigration is a far more evil thing for America than the planting of a few million unexploded shells would ever be."<sup>179</sup>

In the days to come knowledge of biology, sociology, anthropology and the kindred sciences will make it possible to co-ordinate the results of research in preventing race depreciation in the United States. But it is the duty of present-day Americans to make that happy future possible by at once preventing the introduction of further additions of unassimilable stocks. Some of our



racial heritage has been lost, perhaps, unless the Nordic race in future generations can breed out the lesser numbers of heterogeneous strains. But the greater part of our hereditary legacy still remains, provided that we claim it now, before it is too late. The watchword of America to-day is "selective immigration."

## CHAPTER X

### THE RACIAL ASPECT: NORDIC AMERICA

The most valuable asset of any country is excellence of quality in its people. The changes which take place through the years in the occupation, settlement, distribution or, more than all, the racial entity of a country's inhabitants may be recognized as the most important factors entering into the national life.

Whatever the future of the so-called "old stock" in the United States, hitherto it has kept its purity of descent to a relatively great degree. For it is apparent that difference of religion somewhat restricts intermarriage between the Anglo-Saxon element, which is Protestant in belief, and those of the Catholic faith who would be most likely to intermarry with the Anglo-Saxon, that is the Celtic Irish and a considerable part of the population of German descent.<sup>180</sup> Moreover, even among that majority of German descent which adheres to Protestantism, there is a tendency to retain a certain semblance of clannishness. This is nowhere more evident than in the case of the "Pennsylvania Dutch," who adhere to their quaint dialect and sundry old customs in spite of the fact that they trace their ancestry to Colonial days. Likewise, too, the French creoles of Louisiana and the French Canadians of New England tend to perpetuate a certain degree of aloofness. Particularly among the French-speaking families of Louisiana, pride of blood has been carried to an extreme; for the creoles so revere the memory of their forefathers (many of whom were



GEORGE WASHINGTON  
Of Unmixed English Ancestry



sprung from the nobility and the most distinguished families of France) that they foster their provincialism from generation to generation, notwithstanding the fact that they exult in their American birth and ancestry.

Yet despite religious or other differences, it is inevitable that there will be a commingling of all these elements in the generations to come. The fusion of these strains represents the real melting pot in America. But in this particular melting pot there will be no infusion of exotic elements into the Anglo-Saxon strain; for any additions of Nordic blood are merely additions to the type of the Puritan and the Cavalier. As a matter of fact, the term Anglonord, or Anglo-Nordic (English-speaking Nordic, is a far more apt term than Anglo-Saxon to apply to native Americans. Americans of German, Irish, French, Dutch, Belgian, Swiss, Scandinavian, British and Canadian ancestry, who make up the bulk of our nation's permanent population, are identical in race, whatever their individual religious or political views.

The Britisher who bears a Norman-French name no longer considers himself a Frenchman, but an Englishman under the Union Jack. In like manner the assimilable naturalized or native born citizen of the United States can only feel himself an American beneath the Starry Flag, no matter where his ancestors originated. Any other view of the term "American" is a disintegrating factor. Such terms as "Anglo-Saxon" or "German" or "Celt" have no racial significance whatsoever, but are primarily lingual and cultural. Hence it behooves the intending true son of America to fuse himself into the great body of the American people and to absorb the Anglo-Nordic civilization of America, while at the same time giving to America the best, but not the conflicting, concepts of his own culture and folklore. In

the past the Huguenots, Dutch, Scotch-Irish, Scandinavians and others have assimilated themselves with the body politic without losing one whit of the strength of character and remarkable talents that were themselves an asset in the upbuilding of our nation. Can we to-day attach anything "foreign" to such names as Paul Revere, Faneuil, Herkimer, Farragut, Beauregard, Sheridan or Roosevelt? A thousand times, No! Because these men sank their French, German, Spanish, Dutch or Irish descent in their pride of Nordic America, and in defense of the ideals and doctrines of our Nordic heritage.

The amiable idealists, the scheming politicians and those whose souls are warped by money lust dwell upon merely the "psychological tie" and the "idea" of Americanism. But these misguided folk forget that idealism must have expanded through the centuries, not sprung into being suddenly; and that Americanism is actually the racial thought of the Nordic race, evolved after a thousand years of experience, which includes such epoch-making documents as the Magna Charta and the Declaration of Independence. The Anglo-Nordic idea of liberty sprang from the forests of Germany, France and Scandinavia, gathered its greatest momentum in the British Isles, and will approach Utopia in the young nations of North America, Australia, South Africa and New Zealand. These offshoots of England were founded and settled by the purest Nordics from Northwest Europe, by intensely liberty-loving, capable folk. In new lands they were enabled to cast aside the shackles of European convention and give new impetus to democratic institutions. By the liberalism of the newer English-speaking nations, Great Britain is gradually loosening herself of the vestiges of Toryism, while on the Continent Germany and France look to America to revivify them with some of her youthful energy. So is the Nordic idea com-





The Most Widely-Read of American Novelists: Of Combined  
English and Swedish Descent



ing to be reflected among nations of Nordic heritage. The English dominions have already intimated that they are not to be guided in the future by European entanglements. England herself, although inevitably bound to Northwest Europe by geographical propinquity and racial destiny, knows that her heart and mind are now and forever with the youthful and forward-looking younger Nordic nations.

Let us remember that the history, literature, ideals, laws, form of government and social ethics of the people of the United States are Anglo-Saxon in origin; and, still more to the point, that our language is English.<sup>181</sup> After all, a great language, with all its kindred attributes, is one of the most splendid endowments of a race. But also the ability to use that tongue powerfully is an inherited racial trait. Already this tongue which shaped the mind, the soul, of the Nordic race is being debased and mongrelized in New York and other great Eastern cities of America; perhaps quite as effectually as it has been warped in the mouths of the Negroes of the South. Yet our English speech, in its association with the soul of Nordic race life, is a precious heirloom to the American people. Indeed, it is the most redolent, of all the world's tongues, of combined Nordic race life, for it is Germanic, Norse, Celtic, Norman-Latin and Greek in its derivation; and perhaps the Celtic Irishman swings its phrases with greater volubility than the less loquacious Englishman. English binds the Nordic world, Anglo-Nordic and Continental, through its Aryan derivation wherever it finds the natural response of culture and ideals.<sup>182</sup> Shakespeare and Goethe are understood by all Nords, whatever their nationality or dialect, with small loss through translation. From a political standpoint, however, it behooves all persons in America to forget their Old World associations and to adopt an

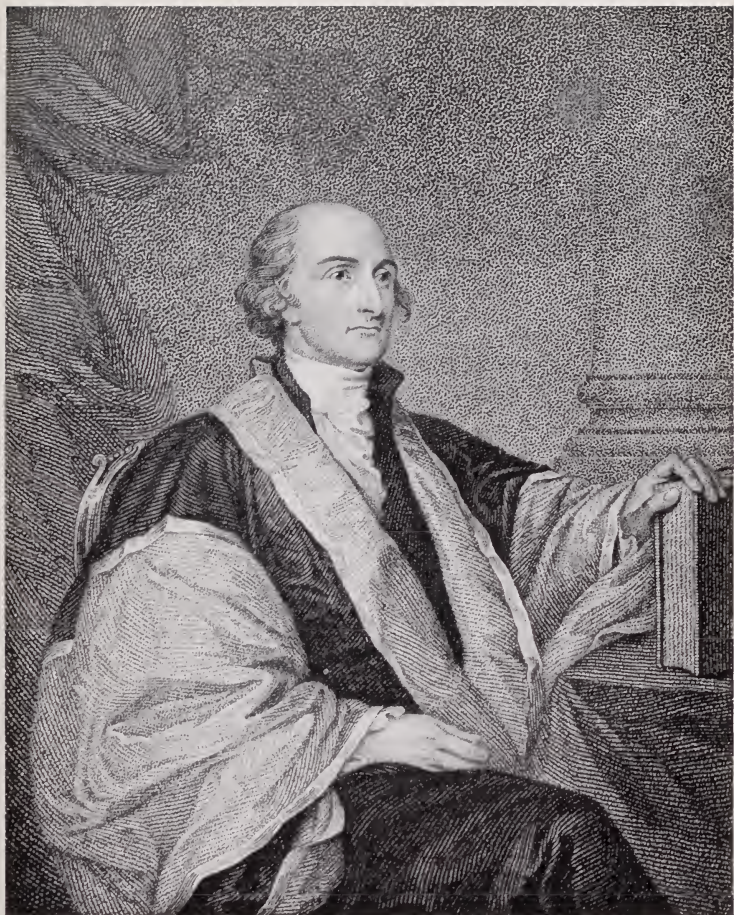
entirely Nordic point of view. For only in this manner can Americanization come to pass.<sup>183</sup>

Political or religious differences in the United States must not be confused with racial antipathies. Why were the American people so patient and long-suffering with respect to the machinations of Irish and German hyphenates? Because they were recognized as of the same flesh and blood as the rest of our Nordic Americans, even though temporarily warped by their obsessions fostered by centuries of European rivalries. Perhaps to some unthinking persons the Sinn Fein and German-American hyphenate were a greater menace to America than the, in general, docile, unresponsive and segregated additions from European hovel and ghetto. This was wholly untrue from the larger view of the hereditary quality of future generations. Whatever may be said of their political views, the most irresponsible Irish and German elements are yet in the main virile, assimilable elements. The magnificent record of the great majority of our citizens of Irish and German descent in the army during the World War needs no special praise from the writer.

As a matter of fact, the racial melting pot is not indispensable to bring about the Americanization of the individual. Thus, paradoxical as it may seem, the Irishman of New England, far from drifting from his religion, oftentimes becomes more Puritan than the Yankee himself; while the Jew of New York may be far more American in his views and affiliations than is the Anglo-Saxon mountaineer of the Blue Ridge Mountains. But in the broader sense of racial groups the melting pot does not melt.<sup>184</sup>

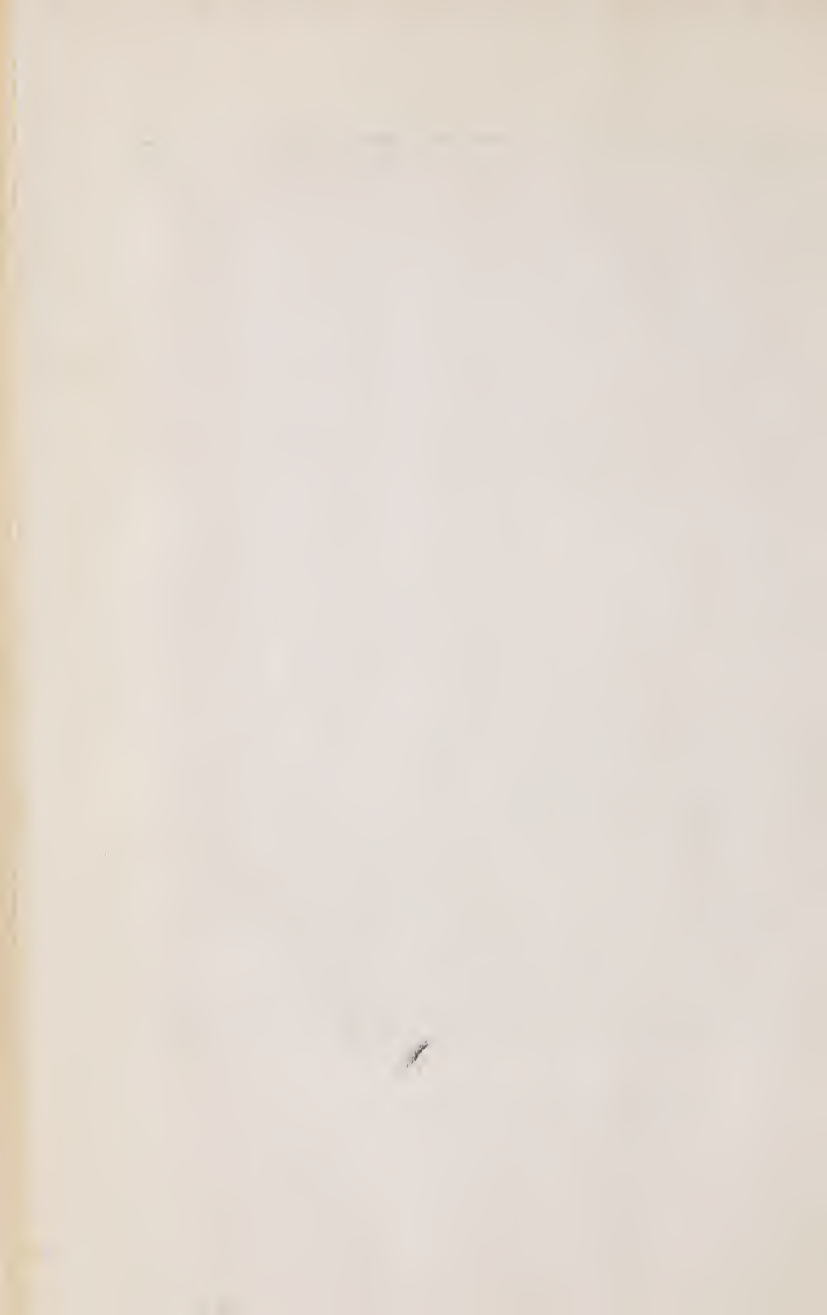
In the large view there is no reason for deploring the circumstance that a third of our population is foreign by birth or parentage. Merely because of that, we can-





**JOHN JAY ESQ.<sup>r</sup>**

Two-fifths French Huguenot and Three-fifths Dutch Ancestry





not be regarded as "mongrel America." But as the remote racial stocks from Southern and Eastern Europe approach the goal where they will outnumber the Nordic stock within several decades, then the racial strain of America will be fated to pass into the mongrel category. Thus we still have enough Nordics in a country adapted to their welfare to breed out, at least in part, the undesirable ingredients already within our borders; but unless drastic measures be prescribed immediately, a few more years will see the Nordic Americans swamped in the deluge of Alpines, Iberians and Assyrioids.

Perhaps it is the fault of Americans, or, more obviously, it may be traced to the traits or attributes of the "new" immigrants, but the fact remains that the American stock does not mix with the people from Eastern and Southern Europe.<sup>185</sup> Thus the influx of these people is creating here a racial problem that may become insoluble.

Among rich and poor alike is found the outward manifestation of racial prejudice. Even the most humble of the former possess an instinctive race consciousness which may be fanned into flame at a moment's notice.<sup>186</sup> And among the higher classes there are tokens hardly less ominous, the best known illustration being the custom of certain fashionable resorts, at the emphatic solicitation and demand of their patrons, refusing accommodations to individuals racially remote. This is the situation, apparent to all except those who will not see, the latter being too busy pondering the "wonderfully leveling effects of American public schools and institutions."<sup>187</sup>

Is it so impossible that huge numbers of foreign-tongued Eastern and Southern Europeans and their progeny, who cling with such surprising degree to the tongue of their fathers might, in another century, either

by the power of their vote, or by seizing the arsenals and treasury of the Eastern seaboard, set up an ultra-radical form of government? Even a common language would not assure similar political or religious views, as proven in the case of Ireland and Great Britain, and the North and the South at the time of the Civil War.<sup>188</sup>

However, the question of whether such a schism could ever come to pass is more or less immaterial as compared to the far greater and more insidious danger imposed by the peaceful infiltration of unassimilable, backward and mongrel stocks. The infusion of the blood of Mediterranean or Alpine captives and allies into the patrician population of Rome, doomed the mighty Roman Empire without the raising of a sword by the slaves. It would be far better to let the armies of a Nordic nation occupy the United States than to allow our country to be deluged by a countless peaceful horde of undesirables. We would eventually throw off the political yoke of a foreign foe, but we could not repair the wholesale blood infusion of inferior stocks. The blending of two alien races, even as in the case of a white father and a Negro mother, will not result in the traits of the superior race being preserved. The American of Nordic blood should come to understand that he must forget his minor political discords, and, above all, that he must "breed true" if his blood is to survive. He must, like the Sephardim Jew, understand that the mentality and influence of a race lie in the latter's comparatively homogeneous strain and, in addition, racial co-ordination from pride of heritage.

The Bureau of Military and Civic Achievement in Washington, the national registry of American families, operates on the principle "that as a nation is made up of families, its history written in the biographies of their individual members, the family genealogy should be preserved for its importance to the dignity and well-being of

the nation . . . and that . . . we will preserve that fine sense of honor and ancestral pride that is the best heritage of an enlightened people."

Real Americanization should not contemplate forcing citizenship upon aliens in our midst. Actually we cannot have a very high opinion of a foreigner who too quickly renounces, or pretends to renounce, his allegiance to the country whence he came. What would an American say if a foreign nation, within which he was forced to sojourn temporarily or otherwise, should attempt to compel him to renounce the Land of the Pilgrim's Pride? Indeed there are hundreds of thousands of Americans in Canada who refuse to become British subjects. The alien who is proud of his nationality and retains allegiance to his home land, but who minds his own business and accepts American life as he finds it, is a far better member of the community than the ranting, foreign-flag-tearing hyphenates who bellow about their American citizenship while annoying American-born citizens with their foreign schemes and machinations. Many aliens who quickly renounce the lands of their birth are generally actuated merely by hate of their European government or by monetary considerations. This does not apply to the man who lives long enough in America to appreciate her institutions or to have his children born under the Stars and Stripes.

From the standpoint of race, it is true that the Nordic element in our population has guided the destiny of our country through both the Colonial period and that of the Republic; and as long as it remains supreme in numbers it must continue to embody the American type. We are indeed a people of one race, one flag and one heritage. But that does not mean that it is necessary, or even desirable, to support such movements as that to convert the Jews to Presbyterianism. Let those Jews, Slavs, or

any other races already here work out their destiny according to their own creed and culture, so long as they deport themselves commensurately with American law and order. We must seek homogeneity solely by limiting immigration to the Nordic elements in the future, or by encouraging emigration of unassimilable and undesirable types to other areas of the globe.

America is not, nor must ever be, the melting pot. Even South America is not a melting pot, for certain elements predominate in certain sections.<sup>189</sup> It would be possible to write pages to show why each and every drop of non-Nordic blood is tending to demoralize the American nation. We could offer the insistent testimony of the world's greatest scientists and investigators—but it is far simpler to use our own common sense. A walk on a busy downtown New York street at the noon hour is sufficient witness of the existence of an emergency problem of biology in America.<sup>190</sup>

Upon the occasion of the opening of the extension courses on racial relations at Columbia University, Dr. Jacob Gould Schurman said: "The public has awakened from the delusion created by the shibboleth of the melting pot. It is disquieted and disturbed by the spectacle of immense alien communities . . . more or less self-contained, speaking many foreign languages, containing an influential foreign language press, with their own banks, markets and insurance companies and sometimes with separate schools—unleavened lumps of many European nationalities, unchanged masses of foreigners entrenched in America, yet not of it, owning in many cases foreign allegiance and in general tied to foreign countries by their language, their sympathies, their culture, their interests and their aspirations.

"I think I am not mistaken when I say that the American people have made up their minds that the doors to



*DeWitt Clinton*

"Father" of the Erie Canal, Governor of New York, United  
States Senator and Candidate for the Presidency:  
Of Anglo-Irish and Flemish Descent





our national house can no longer remain wide open; that there must be a sifting and selection of those who enter, and that the numbers must be considerably reduced. The flow of immigration into the United States should . . . be controlled . . . above everything else by our capacity to assimilate the newcomers into the homogeneous texture of American life.

"Either we can never become a homogeneous American people, or we must set limits to the tide of immigration."

The Nordic race that expanded over so vast a region in so short a time, that covered the land with the network of civilization, that spread education through thousands of schools and churches, that conquered a veritable wilderness, must not be allowed to disintegrate. The American people are at the crossroads. They must choose now as to their future destiny.

## CHAPTER XI

### THE RACIAL ASPECT: FOREIGN RELATIONS AND WORLD WELFARE

It was in the momentous year 1917 that the new frontier of world leadership first beckoned to America. With its Nordic heritage ennobled by three centuries of miraculous achievement, the young giant of the Western World heard the call to guide, rehabilitate, and set its example to backward nations throughout the earth. But another result of the World War was to thrust Nordic Europe into closer contiguity with Alpine and Iberian Europe, so that the latter races are now in a better position to profit by the disintegration of Nordic Europe than before the War. Also a new feeling of distrust has crept in to banish open friendship between Japan and the white nations of North America and Australasia.

However, one conception stands out beyond all others. We must regard the World War as actually a civil conflict within the greater Teutonic, or rather Nordic community.

Nationality is now a subjective phenomenon. It depends entirely upon what a man thinks he is, and may have no connection whatsoever with his race or language. It is often exhibited as a passion to kill a traditional foe. It is to this very frame of mind that we can trace the whole world's troubles at the present day. The time has come to banish national prejudices among folk of similar blood strain; and even men of different race, while they acknowledge the necessity of guarding their blood from

admixture, must learn to respect and laud the best qualities in those of different race or creed or political ideals. In other words, tradition must be set aside where it prostitutes true humanity by promoting armed conflict. If the people of Northwest Europe, and of North America, intend to survive in future centuries they must get rid of all notions of nationality which are puerile; they must widen their vision to include all communities of their own race and ideals, irrespective of feudal traditions and other national misconceptions.

The future of the Nordic race, and thus of the human race, depends upon the English-speaking peoples standing together. That is not to say that the people of Germany, France and Scandinavia are not linked in the future of the Nordic race, for indeed they have traditions and a future very closely linked with Anglo-Saxon affairs. To-day the United States and the British Empire, in resources and fighting power, would make a more powerful combination than most of, if not all the other nations of the world. Thus it is obvious that the continuance of amicable relations between America and England is the one great assurance of world peace, and any propaganda that seeks to disrupt this concord must be looked upon as the arch traitor's machinations against the security of the entire Nordic race. For whether in an internecine conflict or in a greater war, the losses of the Nordic would hasten the fall of that already menaced race.

Can the two great branches of the Anglo-Saxon stock retain their mutual trust in one another in the years to come? Yes, without question, provided that the Anglo-Saxon strain in one or both of the two nations is not diluted beyond all recognition. The United States must, however, draw a lesson to herself, in discovering the secret of Canada's loyalty to Britain, and her refusal to entertain at this day any form of annexation with her

great neighbor to the south. This secret is best epitomized in the words of a certain Canuck, "Canada has no desire to become a part of the 'world's melting pot'—she is too jealous of her Anglo-Saxon birthright." Yet it is significant that whereas a lingual barrier separates the French and English Canadians in Eastern Canada, and the Rocky Mountains bisect the people of Western Canada, on the other hand there are no lingual or geographical barriers between the French Canadians of Quebec and New England, nor between the English-speaking people of Western Canada and of the United States.

The American Review of Reviews says in its editorial of November, 1920: "The northern half of North America was occupied by a confederation of States having ideals and institutions in no respect inferior to ours and in many respects similar. Furthermore, the development of Canada in perfect security since the War of 1812 had been a cardinal point in the established policy of the people and government of the United States. Thus the growth of Canada in population and wealth, instead of weakening in any manner the position of the United States, has been an added factor of security. . . . Canada is free to follow the path of her great destiny, largely because the United States could not and would not permit Canada to be invaded or to be unjustly molested. It is too obvious for argument that Canada's security lies in the facts of her geographical position rather than in her undefined association with the kindred nations that acknowledge a common allegiance to the British crown and to the British flag. There is no propaganda emanating from the United States, so far as we are aware, that is intended in any manner to weaken the Canadian allegiance to those emblems of unity and power.

"It will be Canada's fortunate mission and destiny, as it now seems, to harmonize the policies of North Amer-

ica and the British Empire for peace and justice in the world; and Canada's reward is to lie in the growth and prosperity that will be hers by reason of two facts: (1) that her essential interests are the same as those of the people of the United States, and (2) that her influence in the British Empire is ever increasing.

"The people of North America, to sum it up, are relatively fortunate and safe because of the sheer magnitude of their development of population and resources, their position between two great oceans, their economic independence, their political harmony, and their room for further development within their present domains. The celebrations . . . of the Pilgrim Tercentenary of British settlements in America, gave fresh occasion for asserting the political harmony that exists from the Arctic Sea to the Gulf of Mexico. . . .

"As between the French Canadians and the English Canadians . . . there are difficulties that call for wise forbearance and generous endeavors to diminish frictions and increase friendly relations. In Canada, language is a barrier; and also, in Canada, as in Ireland, religious prejudices account for much discord. Essentially, however, these races—the French, the Irish and the English, together with the Scotch and Welsh—are ethnically alike."

Writing in the "*Revue des Deux Mondes*" (Paris) Marshal Fayolle remarks: "For several years Americans have been pouring into the western provinces of Saskatchewan, Alberta and Columbia. The result is that there are actually forming in Canada three groupings—French in the East, English in the middle and American in the West."

In the foregoing chapters there have been given the general figures that allow the statisticians to conclude that the population of continental United States is in the year 1920 still more than half (even excluding the Irish)

of Anglo-Saxon strain. Further, it must be remembered that the influence exerted by this element through its moral hereditary quality is far out of proportion to its merely numerical superiority. As a visiting Englishman remarked not so long ago, it is out of the large cities that the Briton feels most at home in America; for in the rural communities of Vermont, Iowa, Kansas, Missouri, the South and the Far West the traveler from the British Isles finds a folk whose type is remarkably like that of his own country people of Kent, Hampshire, Devon. Worcester or Yorkshire. The visiting Englishman must begin to realize the deep-seated Anglo-Saxon insistence throughout America and to understand that in the long run it must be the dominating influence in the United States. Through the Middle West, in New England, and down through the South he would find himself in an atmosphere like that to be found among his own class in Great Britain.

"It is high time that public opinion in the United States should be reminded, and also that the perplexed Englishman should be informed, of the significance of the great basic population of the Republic. Talk of serious disagreements between Great Britain and the United States is preposterous. . . .

"If to bewildered observers, whether at home or in distant Europe, America seems inconsistent and uncertain; if there appear vagaries on the part of government or public; if echoes of the shouts of agitators, who claim to voice American opinions resound through the land and across the water, remember then the unruffled . . . millions. Assuredly they are the placid deeps of the nation, which lie far beneath the roaring surface waves. If foreign complications were actually threatened by the latitude allowed to public expression, swift and overwhelming would be their condemnation."<sup>191</sup>



The Sinn Fein propaganda undoubtedly was the greatest disturber of Anglo-American accord. Present and past experience has shown that the immigration of a discontented folk from a land of discord sows the seed of their hatred in our own country. The Irish-American resented any endeavor of the American government to foster an increasing friendship with the other great English-speaking nation, ascribing such sentiment to "Toryism." Yet, singularly enough, he forgot that some Irish-Americans injected Irish politics (which they appear to consider all-important) into the national life of America; nor did he consider that Irish-American agitation and coercion were as inimicable to the best interests of the United States as any brand of Toryism.

Fortunately for the country, it was only among the Irish-born<sup>192</sup> and to some extent their children that we found the hyphenated group. Nor must it be supposed that a good many of these were not American to the core, rather than Irish-Americans. There is, after all, a world of difference between Irish sympathy and that brand of Irish machination and propaganda that was all too prevalent in certain parts of the United States. The presence of this so-called "Irish" vote, in certain important regions, however, brought home the Irish question to the United States almost, if not quite, as pronouncedly as in the British Isles themselves. Only, in the latter country the Irish population was practically segregated, whereas in the United States, or rather in New York and New England, sympathy for Erin could be used as a decoy for votes to turn an election. For the latter reason it became incumbent upon Americans to give some study to the Irish problem.<sup>193</sup>

Imperial nationalities have a collective mentality which gives promise of great destiny. The British, the Germans, the Americans possess such a mentality; the Irish,

Poles and most other peoples lack it, although they may have other very pronounced attributes of genius. But to make such peoples independent from a sentimental motive alone is to create merely artificial boundaries.

The formation of the Irish Free State as a self-governing community within the British Commonwealth must inevitably launch a new era in Anglo-American relations. Already Michael Collins, ardent Sinn Feiner, asks whether America might not be willing to join with the British League of free commonwealths in a League of Anglo-Saxon nations. "By doing so," he declares, "America would be on the way to secure the world ideal of free, equal and friendly nations on which her aspirations are so firmly fixed." (Requoted in the N. Y. Times, December 6, 1921, from The Manchester Guardian.)

The historic trend is toward racial unity rather than centrifugal disintegration.<sup>194</sup> Nations in antagonism cannot exist if the Nordic species is to survive. The time has arrived for Americans to forget the anachronisms of hyphenism of whatever design. By that is not meant that the fostering of friendship with England, Ireland, Germany or any other foreign government should not be encouraged. As a matter of fact, the hope of Nordic unity lies in the influence of the United States in the Nordic world. Upon our country devolves the sacred duty to heal the breach between the British Isles, Germany and France. Since white Americans are mostly sprung from ancestors originating in these three nations, our interests must forever be interlocked with theirs, whatever may be our own national policies. Often the Sinn Fein element in America, and the German-American hyphenates, have allowed their very natural sympathy for the country of their origin to obscure their vision of the future. However, the substructure of the immigrant element of German ancestry in the United States is

founded on the democrats of the "forties," who left the Rhine country rather than bow down to Junker despotism. This American element of German ancestry is well aware of the fact that the World War was fought to make the world, including Germany, "safe for democracy."

The voted determination of the Union of South Africa to remain within the British Empire is a decided indication of the trend of Nordic communities to link their destinies, irrespective of national or political antipathies, as a safeguard against the pressure of the colored world. The bi-lingual Irish, Canadians and Boers are quite, or almost, as Nordic as the British themselves, and are rapidly approaching the day when they will be full co-partners with the latter in the administration of the Empire.

In North America, Canada is a dutiful, if independent daughter nation of the Mother Country, England. But that does not make her forget her close relationship to the big brother nation that has struck out for itself. Thus British North America, in her relationship to the British Empire and to the United States is the most important factor insuring the continuity of Anglo-American accord. But across the English Channel are other relatives of the Anglonords. And in a similar, if not analogous, degree, Great Britain and Ireland must be the medium to promote mutual accord between the Continental Nordics and the overseas Nordics. Indeed, the British Isles and the nations about the Baltic are together the broodlands of the younger Nordic nations, and therefore have much in common. For, after all, an English-speaking alliance must have as its ultimate destiny a Nordic combine, to include France, Germany and the lesser Nordic States, as a protective measure against a Balkanized Europe and the awakening colored

world.<sup>195</sup> Continental Nords are of the same flesh and blood, of practically the same ideals, laws and morals as the Anglonords. Indeed, as we have previously pointed out, the Nordic strain of German tribes, Norse Vikings, Norman French invaders and Flemish settlers all enter into the composition of the Anglonords. Time brings great changes, and the not too distant future may see a League of Nordic States in Northwest Europe to counteract the ever increasing pressure of Alpine and Mediterranean Europe.<sup>196</sup> Blood is the only common basis of understanding, and the increasing importance of this view will be manifest in the days to come. The backbone of world peace is not the oratory of a League of Nations, but the authority of Nordic peoples within such a League. And the iron of the Nordic community is a combination of North America, the British Isles, South Africa, New Zealand and Australia. The position of France as a world power is menaced by her rapidly falling birth rate.<sup>197</sup> The time must inevitably arrive when, with a limited population, the French Republic must turn to Nordic Europe to protect herself from a rapidly growing Italian population close to her border, and to withhold her colonies from a rapidly expanding colored population both within and without her empire. England, with her far-flung rule over native populations of myriads, offers countless points of attack for a powerful rival. Moreover, the restricted area of the "tight little isle" will limit the population of Great Britain, and must inevitably make her turn for assurance of protection to her rapidly growing issue overseas, including the gigantic young Republic across the Atlantic. Already the United States surpasses the United Kingdom in population and resources, and the day must inevitably arrive when Australia, Capeland and Zealandia will equal or surpass the Mother Country in like manner. Another generation

may see a greater Nordic population in North America than in all Northwest Europe including the British Isles, providing, of course, that the United States encourages Nordic immigration and the Nordic birth rate by exclusion of the Alpine and Iberian immigrants, in the future. Lastly, "If Germany is to play that part in the world which her racial endowment warrants, it must be in the territories of the Anglo-Saxon . . . . They are enough for both."<sup>198</sup> In other words, Germany must, with the other Nordic nations of Europe, be looked upon as the broodland of the younger Nordic nations across the sea. Already America allows German immigrants to be admitted to this country. It is quite as much for the interest of Germany as for that of any other Nordic nation to foster a Nordic coalition, because in that way Germany can find the best outlet for her surplus and rapidly increasing millions. The Anglo-Nordic nations, too, can be aided by the benefits of German perseverance and application, not to mention the German language where it lends itself to scientific treatise; while, on the other hand, Germany will gain through her association with Anglo-Nordic inventive genius and enthusiasm. Lastly, the mutual benefits of commerce and security from war would be priceless.

There never has been, nor ever will be, any tangible propaganda in the United States to effect the union of Canada with this country. But providing the racial heritage in the Republic is not lost, propinquity must eventually seal the bonds between our Northern neighbors and us; for contiguity will be a circumstance to be reckoned with in the future (where it does not conflict with racial cleavage, when it would of course become subordinate). In fact, it is not too much to say that Americans already regard Canadians as of themselves, and vice-versa; nor has this feeling lessened Canada's loyalty



to England. This circumstance is a testimonial of the truth that Anglo-Saxonism is not founded upon political domination (as was the Prussian conception of "pan-Germanism") but is based upon sound doctrine and expediency of Nordic racial ties. In like manner enlightenment will gradually cement, in spite of lingual differences, the natural racial ties of all Nordic peoples. And in this truer conception of the relativity of nations, such political bodies as Irish-Americans and German-Americans in the United States appear as anachronistic. What arrant nonsense to brand the desire to foster mutual accord and sympathy among the two great English-speaking nations as a form of "toryism"! For nearly a century and a half Americans of purely Anglo-Saxon blood have spurned even the suggestion of king-led empire; and they need not the "warnings" of newer Irish and German sympathizers to keep them to this age-old determination. Is it not significant that England, Canada and even Holland all celebrated enthusiastically the Tercentenary of the Pilgrim's departure with a spirit of good will and a reverent appreciation of the mixed spirit of adventure and religious devotion that is essentially a heritage of all Anglo-Nordic peoples?

Oppressed people of all races and nations would find their greatest security and prosperity in the protection afforded by a Nordic league of nations.

To the farthest corners of the earth Nordic race conscience is swelling to a greater degree than ever in the past. Australia and New Zealand actually look to the United States for protection against the "yellow peril." The remnant of the some 4,000 irreconcilable Secessionists who went to Argentina after the Civil War (most of whom later returned to the United States) have always been intensely proud of their American blood, and if possible sent their sons to American schools and colleges.



Besides, the World War stirred this patriotism beyond bounds, so that it can now be said that most of them merely hope to make enough money eventually to return to the United States. Likewise the American Mormon Colony planted just across our border in the Mexican State of Chihuahua regard themselves as exiles, and look to the American government in time of danger from savage bandits and revolutionists. Again, the British government now looks with disfavor on the emigration of British subjects to South and Central America, not alone because of a wish to populate her own dominions, but because large numbers of her nationals in Argentina and Peru asked to be repatriated. The unfortunate result of these experiments led England to compel Peru to cease her campaign in London to obtain immigrants. The significance of this lies not only in the fact that the Nordic temperament does not adapt itself to Ibero-Amerind communities, but also that the Nordic still looks to his country of birth to watch over him. Of course this is not always true, particularly when the Nordics dwell in considerable numbers in a certain tract, as in the case of the German settlements of southern Brazil.

On the new principle of international relationships, that the prosperity of each nation is linked with the prosperity of all nations, the United States becomes the pivot of world affairs. Thus the racial character and stability of America will produce a relative improvement in the civilization of all other nations, provided that the quality of American manhood is not weakened by constant mongrel dilution. In the past most nations have been obsessed with the idea that successful progress results from one national group destroying or injuring another group. The importance of saving the quality of a nation's population has been lost sight of in the aim to increase the amount of "cannon fodder."

"Within the white world, migration of lower human types like those which have worked such havoc in the United States must be rigorously curtailed. . . .

"Such are the things which simply must be done if we are to get through the next few decades without convulsions which may render impossible the white world's recovery."<sup>199</sup>

"It is a common mistake to regard non-Aryans as races in their infancy. . . . There is no basis for the belief that these races are following, ages behind, in the footsteps of the Aryan. . . . The world has been theirs as well as ours, and probably for as long. A race with inborn qualities for progress chooses its climate just as it chooses its fields and woods and harbors. The dominant race determines its environment; environment does not determine which shall be the dominant race. The best natural conditions on earth failed to make anything of the American Indian, and the scenes which favored the Mediterranean civilizations were passive witnesses of their downfall.

"Our estimate of race values must not be misled by what these inferior peoples can be taught to do; their measure is in what they can do of themselves.

"The peoples of four-fifths of the globe yield a desultory acceptance to the achievements which issue from the dominant Aryan. The best of them are eager copyists who may adapt, but rarely add to the original. Other peoples, particularly the Chinese, Japanese and East Indians, created early civilizations of their own—the two latter quite certainly, and the Chinese probably, because of early infusion of Aryan blood."<sup>200</sup>

"As the years pass, the supreme importance of heredity and the supreme value of superior stocks will sink into our being, and we will acquire a true race-consciousness

. . . . which will bridge political gulfs, remedy social abuses, and exorcise the lurking spectre of miscegenation."<sup>201</sup>

"We could have helped the Chinese a little by letting their surplus millions swarm in upon us a generation ago; but we have helped them infinitely more by protecting our standards and having something worth the copying when the time came."<sup>202</sup>

"All the good the United States could do by offering indiscriminate hospitality to a few million more of European peasants, whose places at home will, within another generation, be filled with others as miserable as themselves, would not compensate for any permanent injury to our Republic. Our highest duty to charity and to humanity is to make this great experiment, here, of free laws and educated labor . . . In this way we shall do more for Europe than by allowing its city slums and its vast stagnant reservoirs of degraded peasantry to be drained off upon our soil."<sup>203</sup>

Undoubtedly, however, even the backward races in unproductive regions will limit their numbers.<sup>204</sup>

## CHAPTER XII

### CONCLUSION

It is a welcome sign of the times that the sentimental-ist and exploiter within our gates, after a fearsome reign of four decades, are at last to be relegated to oblivion. The trend of legislation points to the fact that the common people have at last impressed their desires on their law-makers in Congress. But with victory in sight there must be no let-up in the efforts of every American citizen with the welfare of his country at heart, to see to it that we get only the best class of immigrants, including only those whom we can employ to advantage.

The recent emergency immigration bill, which contained provision that in any year the number of immigrants of any nationality admitted must not exceed three per cent of the number of foreign-born of that particular nationality enumerated in the Census of 1910, has been re-enacted so as to operate until June 30, 1924.

In a year the number of persons who can be allowed in from Northwestern Europe will number about 350,000, while the number from Southern and Eastern Europe may not exceed 150,000. There are, however, a few exempt classes which will be received in excess of the regularly admitted number. This bill is obviously but a makeshift to give Congress an opportunity to enact more stringent immigration laws. Work has already been begun on new permanent legislation for the regulation of immigration with particular reference to selection and distribution.

Meanwhile the American people must be on the alert to guard against a repetition of the old methods of seduction by which the anti-restrictionists have been so successful in the past. We are still going to hear reproachful oratory in defense of the "strong-hearted and ambitious characters who have torn themselves up by the roots, leaving home, family and friends, to travel to the uncertainty of a new life in a new land"—when, as a matter of fact, from the testimony of all our unprejudiced representatives on the other side of the Atlantic, the emigrants who are now coming from Eastern and Southern Europe are for the most part the weakest and poorest material in Europe, usually traveling on money they have begged from relatives and friends or organizations in America.<sup>205</sup>

It is true that the period lasting from January 1, 1920, to June 30, 1920, saw a marked proportional increase of the number of immigrants from Northwestern Europe as compared with the number from Southern and Eastern Europe. And there was a great rush of persons returning to Southern and Eastern Europe. This must be regarded, however, as merely the continuation of a transitory period incident to post-bellum conditions.

Yet it only needs a cessation of immigration to save America for Nordic humanity. It would take but two or three decades of emigration to scatter the majority of the some 8,000,000 Alpines and Mediterraneans to their homelands. They are remarkably devoted to the countries of their origin. On the other hand, our Jewish population is probably permanent. It is problematical whether many orthodox Jews would emigrate to Palestine, in the event that the latter domain becomes economically established.

During the last six months of the year 1920 there was a gradual change in the class of immigration we had received after the Armistice of 1918, and by December, the



very month which marks the anniversary of the Pilgrim landing at Plymouth Rock, it had become apparent that not only was our immigration stream returning to a pre-war condition, both as to quantity as well as quality, but that the deluge would be measured only by the numbers of ships available. Thus, May of 1921 witnessed the enactment of practically the same emergency laws that had passed Congress in the previous administration, but had been pocket-vetoed by President Wilson at that time.

The Republican administration is pledged to devise a new restrictive immigration policy.<sup>206</sup> It has begun well, all things considered, and the Democrats have proved their intention to make the immigration problem a national, not a party question.

The Japanese feel that they have been discriminated against, as compared to so-called white nationalities.<sup>207</sup> Therefore, why not "kill two birds with one stone" by keeping out not only Japanese, but also Southern and Eastern Europeans of low standards?

At the present time selection of our immigrants by nationality is the only efficacious method, perhaps, to reduce the proportion of the lower racial elements in our population. Yet it may be sooner than most people imagine that our incoming immigrants will be minutely examined by a corps of eugenics experts, who will make certain beyond the shadow of a doubt that we shall "carry on" the heritage left to us by our pioneer Nordic forefathers.

"Wide open and unguarded stand our gates . . .

Portals that lead to an enchanted land . . .

Of such a land have men in dungeons dreamed,

And with the vision brightening in their eyes

Gone smiling to the fagot and the sword.

"Wide open and unguarded stand our gates,

And through them presses a wild, a motley throng—



Men from the Volga and the Tartar steppes . . .  
Flying the Old World's poverty and scorn,  
These bringing with them unknown gods and rites,  
Those tiger passions, here to stretch their claws.  
In street and alley what strange tongues are these,  
Accents of menace, alien to our air,  
Voices that once the Tower of Babel knew!  
O Liberty, White Goddess! is it well  
To leave the gates unguarded? . . .  
Stay those who to thy sacred portals come  
To waste the gifts of freedom."<sup>208</sup>

## NOTES

1. We can hardly find much satisfaction in the realization that the best sources of American Colonial history are recorded in the British Public Record Office in Chancery Lane, London, while our duplicates have disappeared; nor can we fail to deplore the negligence that allowed priceless originals of Census records dating back to 1790, precious heirlooms of racial value, to be destroyed very recently by fire.

2. Bolshevism is fundamentally an Asiatic conception which is repugnant to the Western mind. But in the Slav countries, where the veneer, particularly among the lower classes, is somewhat Oriental from successive invasions by Turanian hordes, who undoubtedly left at least a slight strain in the physical make-up of the Slavs, the theory of community ownership is adopted more readily and unwittingly than among Western Europeans. We have found, to our sorrow, that the recent great war truly "scratched the Russian and found the Tartar."

3. "Hordes of illiterates, 'scum of Europe' . . . who cannot understand Aryan democracy, . . . have waxed numerous in the high civilization built up by Aryans for thousands of years . . . . The growing distrust of the immigrant is the realization by the *people* that the body politic is sick. They have not made the exact diagnosis yet, but they will soon. . . . The body politic will not call a doctor until it is sure it cannot 'throw off' its disease without paying for medicine."—Chas. E. Woodruff, "Expansion of Races."

In his book, "American Police Systems," Raymond B. Fosdick points out, with care, and with grasp of the subject, that the cause of our manifold and disproportionate number of crimes can be traced to the admixture of foreign strains and the unabsorbed races in our population. The habit of the underworld to usurp American names as aliases should not mislead even the most ingenuous examiner of crime in our large Eastern cities.

4. In an address before the American Bar Association at St. Louis, August 25, 1920.

5. "Edmund Burke once said: 'To make us love our country, our country ought to be lovely.' In order that we may take a pride in our nationality and be willing to make sacrifices for our country, it is necessary that it should satisfy in some measure our ideal of what a nation ought to be. If there is to be patriotism, it must be a matter of pride to say *Americanus sum*."—R. M. Smith, "Emigration and Immigration," 1893.

6. "Observe immigrants . . . in their gatherings, washed, combed and in their Sunday best. You are struck by the fact that from 10 to 20 per cent are hirsute, low-browed, big-faced persons of obviously low mentality. . . . I have seen gatherings of the foreign-born in which narrow and sloping foreheads were the rule. . . . In every face there was something wrong—lips thick, mouth coarse, upper lip too long, cheek bones too high, chin poorly formed, the bridge of the nose hollowed, the base of the nose tilted, or else the whole face prognathous. There were so many sugar-loaf heads, moon-faces, slit mouths, lantern jaws, and goose-bill noses that one might imagine a malicious jinn had amused himself by casting human beings in a set of skew-molds discarded by the Creator. . . .

"One ought to see the horror on the face of a fine-looking Italian or Hungarian consul when one asks him innocently, 'Is the physiognomy of these immigrants typical of your people?'" —Edward A. Ross, "The Century", February, 1914.

"We are able . . . to distinguish roughly various immigrant types, representing different heritages. . . . We find a homogeneity in this respect in certain groups, . . . but in all groups certain individuals resemble individuals in other groups more than they resemble the average member of their own group. Thus a Jewish intellectual probably has more in common with an intellectual of any other group than with a ritualistic Jew. Certainly the difference between an intellectual Pole and a Polish peasant is as profound as possible."—Park and Miller, "Old World Traits Transplanted," 1921.

Among high class Italians, particularly North Italians, there is a deep-rooted, if undefined aversion for the swarthy lower classes. The patrician Russians and Bohemians despise the peasant classes, and in the case of the former this unthinking superciliousness actually incited the overthrow of the Czar and his minions. The high class Jews are in sympathy with the Ghetto folk only in the matter of religion. In all social affairs a deep gulf separates the former from the latter. Thus the racial views of the anti-restrictionists is actually—if unwittingly—concurrent in by those of proud lineage among the nationalities mentioned. Hence the latter should come to recognize the fact that restriction of immigration imposes no measure of national antipathy. Significantly enough, did not the Italian government itself offer to hold up passports to America until our Congress could devise a protective immigration policy? It is almost as if our Negro race should start to enter Italy in hordes, as Americans, as citizens of the United States speaking the English tongue; in which case Italy would be well within her rights in objecting to such an unassimilable element, irrespective of their American citizenship. So our foreign citizens of superior stock should find no objections in the efforts of America to protect her homogeneity. In fact they should welcome the reduction in the number of immigrants of mongrel type which reflect upon

their own nationality or race in the eyes of the average American.

7. Ole Hansen, ex-Mayor of Seattle, says that a national law should be passed that "will permit us to handpick our immigrants and distribute them to the needs of the country." He sagely adds, "Make the Europeans stay at home and face the responsibility of establishing their own countries."

8. "Americans have hitherto paid very little attention to this question; first, because they have not considered the difference between hostile and peaceful invasions in history; and second, because they fail to observe that recent immigration is of an entirely different kind from that which our fathers knew. The earlier immigration having been of kindred races and having produced no profound changes, our people became used to the phenomenon and took it as a matter of course. At the present time, many of us consider that the movement now going on is similar to that which has been, and anticipate results no different from those previously observed.

"If the million people coming every year came not as peaceful travelers, but as an invading hostile army, public opinion would be very different to what it is; and yet history shows that it has usually been the peaceful migrations and not the conquering armies which have undermined and changed the institutions of peoples."—Prescott F. Hall, *North American Review*, January, 1912.

9. It is interesting to observe, in this connection, that the Secretary of Commerce and Labor recognized the close association between the Census Reports and the immigration records and in the year 1903 ordered that thereafter statistics of immigration should be compiled in co-operation with the Census Bureau, so that the figures for the number of immigrants might be in harmony with the decennial Census tables which show the birthplace of the foreign-born.

The Census Report of 1910 includes the following information:

The immigrants or foreign-born reported by the Census as having arrived in any given year, or period of years, are of course survivors of those who actually immigrated in that year or period. The difference between the actual number of arrivals in any year and the number of survivors at a later year would represent the number who had died, or had left the United States for the country from which they came, or for other countries, in the interval.

As the result of an inquiry at the 1910 Census, it was determined that the numbers reported as having arrived each year or period of years generally harmonize with the changes in the number of immigrants reported for the same period. It was estimated that about 5,000,000 of the foreign-born whites who were enumerated on April 15, 1910, had arrived in this country

subsequently to January 1, 1901. During the period from January 1, 1901, to April 1, 1910, the Bureau of Immigration recorded the arrival in the United States of 8,223,325 immigrants. The difference between these figures is about 3,200,000, which should represent the number of immigrants who either left the country or died. The two figures, however, are not exactly comparable, because while the Census figures include the foreign-born from all countries, the immigration figures give only a partial record of the immigrants from Canada and Mexico. The comparison, nevertheless, justifies the conclusion that about two-fifths of the immigrants who arrived in the United States during the decade 1900-1910 either left the United States or died before the end of the decade. That the great majority of them left the United States is shown not only by the fact that the reduction in numbers is much greater than could be accounted for by deaths alone, but also by the record of return migration kept by the Bureau of Immigration.

A comparison of the percentages shows that the foreign-born in 1900 had been in the United States a longer time, on the average, than this in 1910. The difference is a natural result of the fact that the decade 1901-1910 was one of greater immigration than the decade 1891-1900.

10. However, as pointed out in an editorial of the New York Sun (October 16, 1920) there seems to have been some surprise created in Europe over certain facts revealed by the United States Census; which points were elucidated quite clearly by William S. Rossiter (Atlantic Monthly, August, 1920) in his article, "What Are Americans?" Mr. Rossiter, a former director of the Census Bureau, points out that for years travelers from Europe have conceived erroneous impressions of the American people for the reason that most of them have landed in that metropolis of the world, New York. He says:

"Is this extremely large foreign element in New York exceptional? Have not world capitals through the centuries been gathering places for the nations? Obviously assimilation is well-nigh impossible. In fact, it is creditable that so much of American traditions and ideals persists, and remarkable that . . . the native grandparentage element . . . still controls so great a part of New York's business, finance, and society." He goes on to show that in New York the traveler finds all the races of the earth living in distinct communities. Here they find less than one-fifth of the population of native parentage. Even if the foreign visitor chances to go beyond New York, it is generally to industrial cities and districts. He says, in this connection, "In the fourteen states comprised in the three urban and industrial geographic divisions (New England, Middle Atlantic, East North Central States) . . . there were twenty-nine cities in 1910 with a population exceeding 100,000. In every thousand of the aggregate population of these cities the white natives of native parentage number but 266. Within the same geographical



areas were forty smaller cities with populations, in the same census year, ranging between 50,000 and 100,000. In these cities white natives of native parentage averaged 413 persons per thousand. But if we discard both groups of cities and consider only the population (in the same geographic areas) residing in cities of less than 50,000 inhabitants, and in towns and country districts, the number of white natives having native parents rises sharply to 595 in each thousand inhabitants. Thus, outside of large cities, even in the foremost industrial states, white persons, either of original stock or, at the other extreme, those having foreign grandparents, contribute three-fifths of every thousand of population, in contrast to the low proportions shown by the large cities, in the same group of states."

Thus, as Mr. Rossiter points out, the traveler in the Eastern States observe principally the foreign individuals, and is impressed with the apparently separate strata of humanity, utterly at variance in modes of life and outward manifestations. The foreign traveler, if he does not reside with friends in a foreign quarter or community, must perforce live in hotels and public environments. Even English visitors utterly fail to grasp the significance of the American communities. They seldom have access to the inner life of the American people. They do not know of the hundred thousand towns and vast rural communities, scattered broadcast across the continent, inhabited almost solely by Americans of Revolutionary stock. Thus even intelligent foreign visitors, among them men of letters, carry back erroneous conceptions of American nationality, which often influence our foreign relations.

Two instances of the false conceptions carried to England are as follows:

Oliver Madox Hueffer, in the *British National Review*, February, 1920, in a paper entitled "Americans Mirrored in the English Mind," writes as follows:

"To begin with, you must dispossess your mind of the idea that there is an American people at all, as we understand a people in Europe. . . . If you took the whole population of Europe, mixed it roughly in a mortar, added a certain flavor of Africans, Asiatics and the like, crushed it with your pestle and scattered the result thinly over the continent, you would have something approximating to America. It would, however, more closely approximate to a 'people' than do the Americans at present; for instead of being properly mixed, they are divided into ethnographic strata, which only touch at the edges. America tries to forget this, and succeeds by vigorous newspaper propaganda in making Europe forget it, because in these stirring times it is well to belong to a united people.'"

And Sir John Foster Fraser, English journalist, upon his return from a trip to America, remarked, before the American Circle at the London Lyceum Club, that the "English people should remember that not one-quarter of the population of the United States were of British descent." (See *New York Herald* columns, November 28, 1920).



Yet how can a foreigner be blamed for imbibing false notions when even eminent men in the United States generalize ambiguously with respect to the composition of our population? For instance, former Senator Albert J. Beveridge, in an address to the Sons of the Revolution in New York, said: "Today millions of Americans are of Italian blood, millions of Polish blood, millions of Scandinavian blood, *tens of millions of Irish blood and other tens of millions of German blood*. We have myriads of Greek blood, and swarms of our citizens come from Russia, Belgium and the Balkans. We of British origin . . . no longer are in the majority, and our comparative numerical strength steadily declines." (See columns of New York Sun, February 22, 1921).

The italicised remarks are ambiguous in a certain sense, if one surveys our racial history conscientiously, for the strength of a community must be measured only by its proportion in the general community.

11. It was only as late as March 29, 1909, that a bulletin was issued, based on the 1900 Census, which set forth the results of the first official research into the composition of the Colonial stock and its relative proportion to the whole population of the country. Four years later, on December 2, 1913, the Census Bureau issued, for the first time in one hundred years of census-taking, a foreign Census Report based on the 1910 Census, showing a mother-tongue enumeration of the various ethnical stocks of foreign birth or parentage. These two reports make it possible to furnish more reliable data as to the racial strains of the white population.

Neither bulletin gives us, however, any information as to the racial origin of those descendants of early immigrants who came over so long ago that the aforesaid descendants are of the third generation and thus included under the category of "native white of native parentage," but not in the Census of Foreign White Stock. Thus the composition of these particular descendants of immigrants after 1790 can be only approximately determined by recourse to the immigration records. We can feel certain, however, that they are almost entirely of Northwest European origin, as is demonstrated elsewhere in this book.

It is also difficult to estimate the round numbers and composition of populations added to the original States by annexation, but it should be possible by means of public documents or other sources. As a matter of fact, it would appear that these additions to our people were more or less negligible, except perhaps in the case of the Louisiana creoles.

12. A. Maurice Low, in his book, "The American People," says: "We should have heard less of the efforts of historical societies to obtain for certain races their 'due place in history' had it not been for the political advantage hoped to be gained."

In fact, we periodically see in the columns of the newspapers comments on the "four million Poles in the United States"

(perhaps this includes the Polish Jews!) or the "one million Lithuanians" or the "one million Ukrainians." Or we find in newspapers, books or magazines statements to the effect that there are anywhere from thirty to forty million Germans, twenty to thirty million "Irish"; or, as one particular Scotch-Irish Society put forward a claim, no less than thirty million Scotch and Scotch-Irish, or as claimed by some Negro societies, fifteen million colored people; or as claimed by the Norwegian exhibit of the "America's Making Exposition" (New York, October, 1921), no less than 4,000,000 Norse of every generation! But if we should add to all these the many millions of other nationalities, such as Jews, Japanese, Scandinavians, Magyars, Jugoslavs, Czecho-Slovas, Armenians, Syrians, Greeks, Bulgars, Portuguese, Spaniards, American Indians, Chinese, Lithuanians, Russians and what not, the population of the country would be vastly larger than the Census reports for 1920, and the original Puritan and Cavalier stock would be as extinct as the dodo bird itself!

13. Possibly the Scotch-Irish are intentionally included, in order to swell the total of this mythical Irish empire to so vast a number. But the relevancy of this procedure is open to vigorous doubt; for while it is admitted that many Scotch-Irish did leave the British Isles for America with bitterness in their hearts, it is reasonably certain that today the descendants of the former, if they take any interest in Irish politics, are unqualifiedly in sympathy with their Protestant co-religionists in the North of Ireland, with whom they claim a common ancestry.

14. Even British journalists appear to be misled as to the influence and strength of the Irish element in America. For example, A. G. Gardiner asserted in the London Daily News that the British do not "appreciate the elements of the Irish question until they understand that it is an American question as well as a British question . . . . At least one in every ten persons in the United States is Irish. . . . They have come across the Atlantic with bitterness in their hearts, and they are avenging themselves upon their oppressor, in the New World. . . . It must not be understood that Americans like this state of things. . . . They hate it and deplore it, for they see how it vitiates the whole atmosphere of their public life."

This estimate is somewhat exaggerated if we correctly interpret the official figures of the Census and Immigration Bureaus, not to mention other available sources of information. It would be more correct to say that less than one man in every ten is Irish, that is if we characterize every man with an Irish patronymic as Irish. The absurdity even of this latter statement is apparent, not only from the viewpoint of ancestral strain, but, more particularly, from the standpoint of religious and political affiliations. For we must consider that such Gaelic patronymics as are to be found in the records of our Colonial population were in the main borne by men of the Presbyterian faith from Ulster. Moreover, the descendants of these, and, still more important,

the descendants of Irish Catholics who immigrated to this country during the period from 1820 to 1840, and even the descendants of some of those who immigrated thereafter, have become so hopelessly intermingled with the rest of the Nordic population, that a man's religion or political faith can no longer be attested by the mere circumstance of the name he may bear. In other words, many Americans may be assumed to have a more or less forgotten strain of Irish blood in their veins, just as they may have the strains of a half-dozen other nationalities. Their "Irish blood" does not necessarily make them sympathize with the Sinn Fein movement. As a matter of fact, the majority of Sinn Feiners in America are recruited from among the Irish element that immigrated to America in great numbers during the period after 1840, and who have, it is true, because of religious affiliations and conjoint social activities, remained a rather distinct element, in such large communities as New York or Boston. It may be added that the custom of the flamboyant among the Irish folk to vaunt their "Irish blood" is a relic of medieval Ireland in modern and tolerant America. Men of Irish ancestry must inevitably come to realize that the puerile exploitation of the term "Irish blood" is an anachronism today, for the term has no racial significance whatsoever. Only in a cultural or a political sense is the term applicable.

There are yet more exaggerated statements than the foregoing which appear from time to time in the British press. Thus an editorial in the London Times of February 11, 1921, refers to the "eighteen million Irishmen in the United States." While this statement may possibly be intended to include the Scotch-Irish as well as the Irish element in the Republic, the fact remains that the remark is most ambiguous, to say the least; in fact, the statement, whether unwittingly or otherwise, appears as unmistakable Sinn Fein publicity. This is particularly evident from the fact that the article goes on to declare that "these eighteen million Irishmen . . . have created a very living Irish question for every American politician."

15. Alien groups who rush to Washington to secure exemption or special privilege for their co-religionists or co-nationals are hurling a boomerang that is already reacting against them.

16. Jamestown should hold great interest for both the English public as well as Americans, for on that spot was born the vast British overseas Empire. The voyage of the *Sarah Constant*, the *Discovery* and the *Goodspeed* was the first practical effort to spread Anglo-Saxon civilization.

17. According to J. Gardner Bartlett, of the New England Genealogical Society, there are now about 85,000 living descendants of the 101 passengers of the *Mayflower* (of whom 50 died within a few months after landing.) The original passengers increased to 270 in 1650. By applying the rate of increase of the New England stock,—an examination of 9,000 families of all

classes shows that the New Englanders doubled about every twenty-eight years until 1845,—he finds that the Pilgrim descendants were 34,560 in 1845. After 1845 the doubling took forty years, and in 1920 the increase is only about 25 per cent over what it was in 1885, so that there would seem to be 85,000 in 1920. This does not include descendants of Pilgrims arriving after the first trip of the *Mayflower*.

18. The lists of the Richmond Land Office show that during the seventeenth century at least 100,000 people were transported into Virginia from England by other people—that is as indentured servants. But these were not all servants in the modern sense of the word, nor were they criminals or convicts. They were English workmen who came of their own volition and signed the indenture, in order eventually to become small planters in the fast growing young American community.

19. The New England Confederation was formed in 1642.

20. Emigrants to the West Indies, including the earlier emigrants who went out on the *Scaflower*, came for the most part from Essex, Northants, Oxfordshire and Warwickshire, with a few from Cornwall, Devon and Wales. (See "Puritan Colonization," A. P. Newton, 1914.)

21. In 1700, when the English mainland Colonies contained about 225,000 inhabitants, there were actually over 50,000 whites and some 100,000 slaves in tiny Barbados. There was a constant emigration of small land-owners from the British West Indies to the mainland Colonies.

22. "The Colonization of North America," Bolton and Marshall, 1920.

23. Although called Walloons, they belonged to the characteristically Nordic aristocracy of the Walloon provinces, or else were Flemings in some cases.

24. "Race Life of the Aryan Peoples," Joseph P. Widney, 1907.

25. See Casson, "The Irish in America", Munsey's, Vol. 35, April, 1906. Also, "History of the World," Grolier Society, Vol. 12, p. 6099.

26. It is a matter of history that a part of England was detached at an early era to become Lowland Scotland. The Anglo-Saxons of this Southern part of Scotland had often adopted Scotch names. They became the Scots who were to defy England under Bruce and other noted chieftains. Later it was these Anglo-Saxon Scots, not the Celts of the Highlands, who invaded Ulster and were the progenitors of the Scotch-Irish.

27. The large number of Scotch Highlanders among the Royalists must be attributed to the inborn loyalty of the clansmen to a dynasty of Scotch affiliations (albeit of German descent) and to the cabinet advisors who were, as it so happened, from North Britain. In fact there are records of the period in England which refer to the American Revolution as the "Scotch War," in certain heated tirades, although in justice to Scotland there appears to have been a very obscure basis in fact for the derisive reference. However, it is significant of the overwhelming number of Tories among the Scotch in America at the outbreak of the Revolution that, among other grievances declared in the first draft of the Declaration of Independence, there was the fact of the English King sending over "not only soldiers of our common blood, but Scotch and foreign mercenaries to invade and destroy us." The descendants of the Scots who came over after the defeat of Culloden were undoubtedly Tories; as were also the Scotch Regulators who were with the defeated Ferguson at Kings Mountain, and in the border warfare in the Virginia valleys.

28. Benjamin Franklin took a census of the population of Pennsylvania in 1750, in which he found that one-third of the people were Quakers, one-third Germans, and one-third miscellaneous. (See "Chronicles of America," Vol. 8, Sydney G. Fisher).

29. See "The German Element in the United States," Faust, 1909.

30. Only 17,000 out of 29,000 Hessian soldiers left America after the Revolutionary War. (See H. N. Casson, "The Germans in America," *Munsey's Magazine*, Vol. 34, March, 1906.)

31. See Note 20.

32. See Maps, p. 122, "Population Growth in a Century," Census Bureau, 1909, showing the distribution of nationalities in the original States in 1790.

33. "In 1641 the Catholics made up about one-fourth of the population (of Maryland) but included most of the influential families."—Bolton and Marshall, "The Colonization of North America," 1920.

34. Senator Henry Cabot Lodge ("Distribution of Ability in the United States," *The Century*, September, 1891) evolved a list of eminent American statesmen, soldiers, clergymen, authors, lawyers, scientists, etc., from a well known encyclopedia containing 14,243 biographies, with results as follows:



English .....	10,376
Scotch-Irish (including a minority of English or Irish patronymics).....	1,439
Scotch .....	436
Welsh .....	159
Irish .....	109
German .....	659
Huguenot .....	589
French .....	85
Scandinavian .....	31
Swiss .....	5
Dutch .....	336
Others .....	19

However, only descent in the paternal line is traced here and it is possible that ability was more often transmitted through the mother. Nor must eminence be confused with ability in general of a population.

35. "The American nation is composed of so many elements that one man may be descended from half a dozen different nationalities and as many religions. Shall an historical society belonging to each of these races and religions claim the distinguished personage for its own?"—Channing, "A History of the United States."

36. The published figures of the Census of 1790 (3,929,214) do not include Vermont or the territory Northwest of the Ohio, which would bring the total to over 4,000,000.

### 37. Computation 1:

"Estimating the survivors in 1850 of the foreigners who had arrived in the United States since the Census of 1790, upon the principle of the English life tables, and making the necessary allowances for the less proportion of old and very young among them and for re-emigration, etc., their number is stated in the abstract of the Census published in 1853 (p. 15). From this a reduction is then made of 15 per cent, on account of the greater mortality of immigrants and their lower expectation of life, which brings the actual survivors to a little more than 2,000,000. To this add 50 per cent for the living descendants of foreigners who have come into the country since 1790 (four-fifths of the number since 1830, and could not have both children and grandchildren born in the country, and more than half arrived since 1840, and must have had comparatively few native born children) and the number of foreigners and their descendants in 1853 is not likely to exceed between 3,000,000 or 3,200,000.' (Compendium of the Seventh Census, p. 119.)

"On this basis the descendants of white immigrants arriving subsequent to 1790 or 1800 and prior to 1853 must have num-



bered about 1,000,000 in that year; and it is probable that of this total about one-half were native white of foreign parentage and the other half native of native parentage.

"Since the white population of the United States more than trebled between 1850 and 1900, the group of native white of native parentage at least trebled during the same period, thus contributing about 1,500,000 to the native white of native parentage in 1900. The 500,000 native white of foreign parentage in 1850 were very young, and probably did not contribute to a great extent to the native white population of native parentage before 1870. The estimate of the contribution by the immigrants arriving between 1790 and 1850 is doubtless liberal enough to counterbalance this omission.

"In 1870 there were 4,167,616 native inhabitants both of whose parents were foreign born and 1,157,170 native persons having one parent native and the other foreign born. Hence the foreign element within the native population comprised 4,746,201 persons. Since the total population of the United States doubled between 1870 and 1900, it is reasonable to assume that the foreign element within the native white population at least doubled in the period under consideration. In the process of doubling, however, the increment will be greater than the base, which is being constantly reduced by death; hence the native white of foreign parentage, which evidently amounted to approximately 10,000,000 in 1900, were composed of two unequal parts; the native white of foreign parentage contributing 4,000,000, and their offspring (native white of native parentage), 6,000,000.

"The contribution to the native white of native parentage made by native whites of foreign parentage born after 1870 cannot be determined with any degree of accuracy. The total number of native white persons of foreign parentage born between 1870 and 1880 and surviving in 1900 was 3,067,062. It is possible that this element may have contributed 500,000 persons to the native whites of native parentage.

"The above computations indicate that in 1900 the contributions of the foreign stock to the so-called native element had reached the following approximate total.

Computation of immigrants arriving:

Between 1790 and 1853 .....	1,500,000
Between 1853 and 1870 .....	6,000,000
Between 1870 and 1880 .....	500,000

Total ..... 8,000,000

"In 1900 the native element in the United States was 43,495,762. Eliminating the 8,000,000 persons above determined, the white population enumerated in 1800 appears to have increased to 35,495,762."

Computation II:

"The growth of the white native stock was estimated at the rate of increase for twelve Southern states (which in 1850 included less than 4 per cent foreign born, with little change as late as 1900).

"Allowing for the fact that since 1870 the rate of increase of the native stock outside of the South has been comparatively low, nevertheless the increase in the distinctly native stock in Southern States can be utilized as a basis.

Actual White Population Specified Above				Estimated Native Stock	
Census Year	In United States	In Southern States	In Remaining States	Per cent increase in Southern States and half decennial percentages after that year	In United States
TOTAL WHITE POPULATION					
1820	7,862,166	2,437,451	5,424,715	.....	.....
NATIVE ELEMENT, WHITE					
1870	23,374,577	6,518,012	16,856,565	14,515,688	21,023,720
1880	29,621,817	8,843,928	20,777,884	17,102,206	25,946,139
NATIVE WHITE OF NATIVE PARENT					
1890	34,358,348	10,884,524	23,473,824	19,086,062	29,970,580
1900	40,949,362	13,328,829	27,621,033	21,242,787	34,571,115

Actual Native White of Native Parent				Estimated Native Stock, White	
Census Year	In United States	In Southern States	In Remaining States	Remaining States	United States
1890	34,358,348	11,262,307	23,096,041	19,445,208	30,207,510
1900	40,949,362	13,903,622	27,045,740	21,739,743	35,643,365

"Upon replacing the native white population of native parentage living, in 1890 and 1900, in the Southern States and in the remainder of the United States by the native whites of native parentage born in the Southern States and in the remainder of the United States, the native stock of the white population appears as follows:

Computation III:

"The growth of the native stock, measured by the proportion

of persons in Massachusetts having native grandfathers is found to be 33,729,282."

The Report concludes that, "the three computations show a range of nearly 20,000,000 (between thirty-three and a half and thirty-five and a half millions)." Thus it appears that the descendants of persons enumerated before 1790 would be about 35,000,000 and the descendants of those arriving after 1790 would be the remainder of the white population enumerated in 1900, that is 31,853,062.

38. Since the "old stock" in 1900 was about 35,000,000 and the total white stock (including Mexicans) was 66,809,196, according to the Census of 1900, it stands to reason that the white persons (including Mexicans) who arrived in or were annexed to the United States after 1790, and their descendants, numbered about 31,800,000 in 1900.

The Report of the Census Bureau may be supplemented by the information that in the decade June 30, 1900 to June 30, 1910, there were 8,795,386 immigrants. As to the actual number of emigrants for the decade, we have no accurate figures, for it was not until 1907 that a provision was included in the immigration law requiring masters of vessels to file lists of alien passengers, giving important data concerning them. However, the Census Bureau estimated that almost 3,200,000 must have left the country between January 1, 1901 and April 1, 1910, or, in other words, that the emigration was about two-fifths of the immigration for the decade (see Note 9), while the Immigration Commissioner obtained results harmonizing with the above proportion by estimating the number of average departures according to figures obtained from the steamship companies during four months in 1907, when the returning tide was normal. Now if we consider the immigration of 129,797 Japanese during the decade, and the fact that hardly a majority of the 107,546 immigrants from the West Indies during the decade could have been Negroes, and the small number of colored immigrants from all other countries, it may be assumed that the total colored immigration for the decade was not over 200,000; and that therefore the "white" immigrants (including Mexicans and Turks) were about 8,100,000 in number. If we now apply the two-fifths ratio of white emigrants to white immigrants, it will be found that the approximate number of white emigrants for the decade was 3,240,000. Hence the net immigration (whites and Mexicans) was 4,860,000. But the Census figures tell us that the white population of the country increased 14,922,761 during the decade. If we subtract from the latter the net white immigration, we have left 10,062,761. But also we must assume that the potential natural increase of the immigrant and emigrant elements for the decade were, on an average of arrival and departure during the ten years, respectively six and a half per cent (that is, one-half the natural increase of the native whites), and the difference between the potential natural increase of the immigrant element for the decade (which would be about 526,500) and the potential

natural increase of the emigrant element for the decade (about 210,600 would be the net natural increase of the immigrant element, which amounts to 315,900. This must, of course, be subtracted from the above 10,062,761, giving us 9,746,861, which represents the natural increase of whites and Mexicans for the decade, irrespective of immigration and emigration.

We already know the proportionate figures for the Colonial white stock and the immigrant stock for 1900, and by applying their ratio with respect to the 9,746,861 natural increase of whites and Mexicans, we find that the old stock must have increased about 5,101,649 and the immigrant stock 4,645,212, to which latter figure must be added the net immigration for the decade of 4,860,000 and the net potential natural increase of the immigrant element of 315,900, which total sum amounts to 9,821,112. Then, by adding these increases to the figures for 1900, we find that the old Colonial stock must have numbered about 40,101,649 in 1910, and the immigrant and annexed "white" stock (including Mexicans and Turks) must have amounted to approximately 41,621,112.

Then again, for the decade from 1910 to 1920, the total net immigration (that is, the difference between the figures of 5,676,966 immigrants and 2,065,469 emigrants, or 3,611,497 net immigrants) plus the net potential natural increase of the immigration and emigration for the decade (in other words, the some 364,715 potential progeny of immigrants during the decade, after their arrival, minus the 117,597 potential progeny of emigrants during the decade, after their departure from the United States, which difference amounts to 247,118, representing the approximate actual net increase as a result of the ebb and flow during the decade) gives us the total increase in the country's population through net immigration, which is found to amount to 3,858,615. (See Appendix I, Table III).

Similarly, the increase of the colored element (Negroes, Japanese, Chinese, East Indians, Koreans and Pacific Islanders) through net immigration and the net potential increase is 116,663. Hence, subtracting the colored increase from the total increase as a net result of immigration and emigration, we have 3,741,952, which figure represents the increase of the country's "white" population as a result of net immigration and net potential increase for the decade.

We know, besides, that the 1910 Census gives a total white population of 81,731,957 for the continental United States, and that the 1920 Census gives 94,822,431. Hence there was an actual increase of "white" population for the decade amounting to 13,090,474. Therefore, by subtracting the total "white" increase by net immigration and its net potential increase (3,741,952) from the country's total "white" increase (13,090,474), we find that the natural increase of the "white" population enumerated in 1910 was 9,348,522, or 11.44 per cent.

Thus we may apply this percentage to determine the increase

of either the "old stock," or the "immigrant and annexed white stock," as enumerated in 1910, for the decade.

Therefore, on a basis of an increase of 11.44 per cent, the "old stock" must have increased from 40,101,649 in 1910 to 44,689,278 in 1920.

39. During the period under discussion, it had not become a habit for certain individuals to scorn the names of their forefathers and to assume the so-called "American" names to which they have no right other than that accorded through the disgraceful laxity of our statutes in that respect. It must be borne in mind, however, that in the case of the British element names should not necessarily be accepted as always indicative of country of origin. Thus a great majority of those bearing Scotch names, and a few who bore English names, came from the North of Ireland. Also, most of those bearing Celtic Irish names appear to have been Protestants from Ulster. The muster-rolls and pay-rolls of the frontier forces of North Carolina in 1788 contained a number of names reminiscent of Milesian Ireland; but if we except the few descendants of imported Irish bond-servants, most of these Irish names were borne by staunch Presbyterians of North of Ireland origin, if we are to be guided by the historical fact that the Scotch-Irish element was numerous on the frontier. It may also be mentioned in passing that some of those bearing Scotch names must have come from England, while on the other hand others, with English patronymics, may have hailed from the Lowlands of Scotland. It was particularly observed by the statisticians of the Census Bureau engaged in working out the Report on the "old stock," that the English and Scotch names were overwhelmingly Anglo-Saxon in origin, and that the Celtic element was almost negligible. Thus comparatively few Highland Scots, judging by the preponderance of Lowland names, appear to have settled in the United States before 1790. The Welsh, too, included with the English in the Census figures, must have formed only a slight stream of settlers before that year.

40. The greatest number of respected authorities recognize the above Census tabulation as the most painstaking in existence, compiled by utterly unprejudiced government statisticians. An exception is Michael J. O'Brien, of the American Irish Historical Society, whose book, "A Hidden Phase of American History," sponsored by the above Society, takes issue with the results of the careful Census tabulation on the grounds that many more names should have been recognized as of Irish origin. This author gives us arbitrary figures supposed to have been derived from the marriage records of men and women of "Irish" nomenclature and believes this justifies the assertion that the Census figures are too small. He claims that thirty-eight per cent of the Continental Army was "Irish," and he triumphantly gives us an alphabetical list of so-called Irish soldiers of the Revolution, in which are to be found such pronounced Anglo-Saxon names as, for example, "Armstrong." If this is a criterion of how Mr.



O'Brien determined Irish nomenclature, we must naturally appear somewhat sceptical. He even claims English names to be, in many cases, mutations of originally Irish surnames; forgetting that in such a controversy the burden of proof is upon him who would uphold the numerical superiority of the Irish, in the light of the existence of authentic records showing the mass migration of Presbyterians from Ulster to America and the absence of any authoritative documents that prove the arrival in the Colonies of any great hegira of Catholics from Ireland. As a matter of fact, the Catholic Encyclopedia estimates the number of Catholics in the country in 1790 at 30,000, and this is borne out by Bishop Carroll's figures for 1776 (estimated by him in 1790). Three-fourths of the 20,000 Catholics in the Colonies at the time of the Revolution were in Maryland, among whom the English and Scotch element were probably numerically preponderant and certainly most influential. Moreover, Mr. O'Brien scoffs at the term "Scotch-Irish" and discards religion as an indication of nationality. He holds that, since Protestants bearing Irish surnames were of Irish origin, however remote, they must be "Irishmen." Or in other words, to paraphrase, "Once an Irishman, always an Irishman." But he forgets, evidently, that even if this be admitted, it is equally true that Irish Catholics with English names would then be "English," according to his own precept. In fact, even if Mr. O'Brien has not appropriated every possible name of Irish tinge, in addition to many of obviously non-Irish character or dubious origin, it is certain that the author is so patently, arbitrarily, whimsically and exaggeratedly Irish in his lauding of the Irish "race," that it would be folly to be misled from the official statement of the Census Bureau. In general it may be said that differences of names as pertaining to nationality are more or less offset. Certainly the method of determining nationality (whether in general or in the strict meaning of the term) by means of a study of nomenclature within the records of the 1790 Census is, in this case, more practicable than any other procedure.

Henry Jones Ford, in "The Scotch-Irish in America," also takes exception to the Census Bureau's survey, in so far as concerns his claim that "Many Ulster names are common English names," and that "Doubtless the English proportion . . . includes many Scotch-Irish families." However, Mr. Ford obviously ignores the fact that the Scotch have always flocked to the English Border, or even as far as London, and hence many of those bearing Scotch names were actually Englishmen, or even Celtic Irishmen. In the large view, the proportions of the various nationalities appear to balance very reasonably. Indeed, Charles Knowlton Bolton, in "Scotch-Irish Pioneers in Ulster and America," accepts the "Scotch" element as in general embodying the Scotch-Irish stock in America. The Anglo-Irish element within the Irish total must have been negligible owing to the fact that most of the English in Ireland at that time were land-owners who did not emigrate.



The population estimates of Fiske, Boas and Faust, made before 1909, must be thrown into the discard as a result of the illuminating and incontrovertible estimate of the Census Bureau.

41. How small must be the ratio of the Welsh element to the general population of the country at that time can be judged from an examination of the combined populations of New Jersey counties up to 1790 (see "Population Growth in a Century"), the records of which give the Welsh element separately from the English. On the fairly safe assumption that the Welsh element settled in greatest numbers in the vicinity of Philadelphia, and that therefore their numbers in New Jersey were out of all proportion to their comparative numbers within the other States (excepting Pennsylvania), the writer would place the number of Welsh in 1790, on the comparative basis of the figures for the Welsh in New Jersey, as about four-tenths of one per cent of the total white population of the country in 1790.

42. The American Jewish Year Book estimates that there were 3,000 Jews in the United States in 1818.

43. It is interesting to note that California is now undertaking the restoration of the ancient Spanish missions. But while we may well recognize the efforts of the Franciscan and Jesuit missionaries, we should not lay too much stress on their historical importance from the standpoints of American civilization, culture and institutions. California is at the present day racially and culturally an outgrowth from the original Thirteen States. The Pacific States are little more descended from the Latin pioneer communities of Monterey and San Diego than South Carolina is sprung from the mission of San Miguel.

44. In 1598 a settlement of 700 men and 130 families had been established at Chamita, New Mexico. The strength and permanence of the white element in this community is doubtful.

45. See "The Colonization of North America," Bolton and Marshall, 1920.

46. See Note 45.

47. From facts narrated by the Louisiana historian and State official, Gayarre.

48. See "The Winning of the West," Theodore Roosevelt. In Parkman's "The Conspiracy of Pontiac" we find the following:

"With the overthrow of the French the English went swarming into what had been the French possessions; and here again was an additional cause of friction with the English government. Down the Mississippi, along the Lakes, following the streams, across the Alleghanies, poured a flood of immigration from the

older settled colonies of the South and the North, the only bar to their progress the forces of nature and the relentless determination of the Indians. . . . Nothing could stand in the way of the ever-advancing host. . . . Indian cunning was matched to English courage, Indian cruelty by English skill. . . . Forts fell under the torch, and peaceful slumber was broken by the war whoop of painted savages who spared neither young nor old; but the settlers held on with grim steadfastness, and in the end the English were masters and the great war chief Pontiac made his submission."

49. The new State Archive Department, created by the Louisiana Historical Society, promises to reveal interesting historical data for the periods of both French and Spanish rule in Louisiana.

50. "Democracy vs. the Melting Pot," Horace M. Kallen, in *The Nation*, February 18, 1915.

51. "Northwest Territory contained but a few thousand inhabitants nearly all of whom were in the fertile valley of the Ohio."—"Population Growth in a Century," Census Bureau, 1909.

52. "The American People," F. H. Giddings, in "The International Quarterly," June, 1903, Vol. VII.

53. George W. Cable, an authority on the creoles, says: "The title (creole) did not first belong to the descendants of Spanish, but of French settlers. But such a meaning implied a certain excellence of origin. . . . Later the term was adopted by, not conceded to, the natives of mixed (mulatto) blood and is still so used among themselves."

Thus we should regard the term creole as pertaining to white persons descended from the French or Spanish settlers of Louisiana and the Gulf States.

54. See "The Creoles of Louisiana," George W. Cable, 1884. The strain of these nondescript adventurers of the early years still survives in the blood of the poorer white population of present-day New Orleans.

55. The Census of 1790 did not include the so-called Territory Northwest of the Ohio and part of Vermont, which (see "Estimates of Population in the American Colonies," Franklin B. Dexter, 1887) would have brought the population of the country at that time from 3,929,214 to over 4,000,000; in other words, the population of that outlying region would have been at least 71,000. Probably over half of these, or 40,000, were French (at that same period the French of the St. Lawrence valley numbered probably 150,000), while the rest, 31,000, were New Englanders and other Anglo-Saxons, including perhaps as many as 2,000 Scotch-Irish.

As Bolton ("Scotch-Irish Pioneers") points out, the Scotch-Irish family, averaging 5.67 members, fell short of the English family of 5.77, which was not expected of the later comer and frontiersman. (See W. S. Rossiter, "Population Growth in a Century," pp. 274, 275).

The population of East Florida, as we have seen, was very small. We may take into consideration, however, the descendants of the same 1,500 indentured colonists from the Balearic Islands (allied in tongue and Gothic lineage with the Catalans) who came to New Smyrna in 1767, removing shortly thereafter, upon the abrogation of their indentures, to the vicinity of St. Augustine, where their descendants survive to the present day. Over twenty years later, in 1790, these Minorcan settlers must have doubled their numbers to 3,000. To these we may also add 2,000 Spanish creoles, who were next important in numbers in that region in 1790, as well as some 1,000 English (the latter including not only many Loyalists but also some forty families from Bermuda, probably of English origin for the most part, who had gone to Mosquito Inlet in 1766 to engage in shipbuilding, and who must have considerably increased in numbers by the year 1790) and also perhaps some 500 German townfolk.

After 1783 West Florida and Louisiana became one province under a Spanish governor, so that we should consider the two regions together in estimating their population for 1790. In West Florida Mobile remained half French in that year, in spite of having been somewhat reduced by the emigration of creoles to New Orleans. The other half of the community had become distinctly Anglo-Saxon in population, while the interior of West Florida, as we have seen, was fast becoming filled with English and Scotch pioneers and Loyalists. As for Louisiana proper, we have already noted that its white population was mostly French creole, with some Spanish creoles and a constantly increasing element of Anglo-Saxons, the latter drifting into the province from the northward and the eastward. We are told that Upper and Lower Louisiana had grown to a population of about 50,000 (including white and colored) in 1800, as compared to Louisiana's population of 11,500 (over half of whom were colored) in 1760. Thus it is reasonable to suppose that there was a population of some 40,000 in 1790, of whom probably over a half, or perhaps 24,000, were white, owing to the large influx of Anglo-Saxons. Of these at least 14,000 must have been French, with the rest of the white population divided between some 2,500 Spanish creoles, 6,500 Anglo-Saxons (Americans, Loyalists, English and Scotch Highlanders, the latter in West Florida). The figure of 16,500, representing the total of Spanish and French creoles in Louisiana in 1790, if increased fourteen-fold as in the case of the white population of the English Colonies, would give us 231,000 for the year 1920, which is in keeping with the fact that somewhat less than half the white population of the State of Louisiana at the present day is of creole descent, numbering proportionately about 230,000.

The Illinois country was preponderantly French with a much lesser number of English. We are told that this region, including in addition all Western posts of the French, boasted of 6,000 white inhabitants in 1760, who may possibly have increased to 18,000 by 1790, provided that they increased as rapidly as the English pioneers, who doubled their numbers every twenty years, which is rather doubtful when we consider the comparatively small number of white women among the French pioneers. (At this time, as we have already stated, there must have been at least 150,000 French in the St. Lawrence valley). Of the some 6,000 whites mentioned above perhaps 15,000 were French, while the remaining 3,000 were composed of Anglo-Saxons, of whom perhaps one-twelfth, or 250 were Scotch-Irishmen.

On the other hand, no Anglo-Saxons had approached the Spanish settlements in New Mexico and thereabouts before the nineteenth century. Thus in 1790 the white population of the Southwest was very homogeneous in character, for the French voyageurs and traders who were beginning to penetrate the Spanish settlements were still a negligible factor in the region. Today the descendants of those white Spanish settlers who were to be found in the great Southwest, particularly New Mexico, at the time when it was acquired by the United States, are known as "Spanish-Americans" (not to be confused with folk from other regions of Spanish America other than what was then Mexico), to distinguish them from the swarthy Indian peon element. It is admittedly a very difficult matter even to approximate the number of white people of pronounced Spanish blood in the Southwest in the year 1790, and thus to gain a close idea of the proportionate number of their descendants in 1920. It seems fair to assume that there were nearly, if not quite, as many white inhabitants of that region as there were French in Louisiana proper at that time. Thus we may take the figure of 10,000 as a working basis to determine the strength of the Spanish element of the Southwestern region in 1790, as well as in 1920.

Let us now attempt to justify this admittedly tentative figure by proceeding on the assumption that this Spanish stock, like the "old stock" of what were the original English Colonies, increased fourteen-fold from 1790 to 1920, thus numbering proportionately some 140,000 in 1920. It now becomes necessary to show that this figure of 140,000 relatively coincides with the estimates of the modern population of Mexican origin within the borders of the United States; and at any rate we may just as well discuss the Mexican population fully at this point, since that element occupies a position of some importance in the discussions within other chapters. Moreover, most of our records of Mexicans and Spanish-Americans make no such distinctions as to race, so that it is possible to divide the Mexican population into its component parts only after we have considered it as a whole. But returning to our figure of 10,000 for 1790, and its increase to 140,000 in 1920, it must be admitted that there is some justification in a challenge that the disparity in the number of white

women among the early settlers of the Southwest would have reduced to some extent an increment so great as fourteen-fold, in which case the original population might have been somewhat larger. Also it must be taken into account that much Indian blood must have crept into the blood of certain individuals of Spanish-American ancestry (as was not the case with the settlers of the English Colonies) in the interim, which circumstance also reduced somewhat the rate of increase of the whites. Be that as it may, the figure of 140,000 for the year 1920 appears to be remarkably well borne out when we survey the entire present-day population of the Southwest.

It is a generally well known fact that the white population of modern Mexico represented, at least until recently, about one-fifth of the total population of that country. At first glance it might appear that we could only apply this ratio to determine the proportion of white or peon blood among the descendants of the inhabitants of the Southwest in 1790. But it must be remembered that the whites formed a very large proportion of those who crossed the Rio Grande, that they kept their blood pure more or less, and that the Indian tribes among whom they dwelt were reduced in numbers by war, pestilence and a retarded birth rate. Hence it would be fairer to assume that the white element in the old Mexican and Spanish-American community was fully one-quarter of the total early population. Bancroft says of the white Spanish element in Texas in Colonial times that, "The admixture of races in Colonial days was much slower in the North (Northern Spanish regions), owing to the inferior culture of the Indians and the later entry of settlers. . . . The Spanish element remained strong." Therefore, if the whites of this community numbered 140,000 in 1920, the aboriginal stock must have amounted to some 420,000 in that year.

With respect to the net gain to the population of the United States through net immigration from Mexico and its potential net increase, from 1790 up to about 1870 or 1880, we can rest assured that it was almost negligible. For in the years from 1820 to 1860 the Immigration Bureau recorded only 13,000 Mexicans as having crossed into the United States. (Incidentally, even as late as the decade between 1894 and 1904, only 2,500 Mexican immigrants were recorded). While it is true that there were probably some "wetbacks" even in those early years, yet it is well understood that, at least until recently, all our immigrants from across the Rio Grande have been migratory in character, most of them entering the country at certain seasons, only to return again eventually; so that it would seem that the inward and outward stream were fairly well balanced. In 1820 the population of Texas was but 3,000. And we know that at a certain period thereafter an "inevitable friction was caused between the 20,000 Texan settlers and the Mexican authorities, in a region almost devoid of Mexican population." In 1850 the total combined population of our four Border States was only



367,000, and this number was largely composed of American settlers who had poured into the new lands, and their descendants. Evidently, so it would appear, the deserts of northern Mexico have in some measure acted as a barrier in the past to prevent an influx from the regions of central Mexico, with its potential and dense mass of population, for in those days the railroad was practically unknown in that country. However, for the sake of argument we may assume that the early immigrant element descended from immigrants after 1790, and before 1850 or 1870, and taking into consideration the emigration of that period, would amount to some 60,000, perhaps, in 1920. Of these perhaps one-fifth (as in the case of the population of Old Mexico), or 12,000, were white, and 48,000 peon or Indian. Also the tabulation given by the Census of foreign stocks (see Appendix I, Table II) yields the total number of Mexicans for two generations, of whom the peon element (on the basis of the population of Old Mexico) must have numbered four-fifths, or 290,738 in 1910. Then we can estimate that one-fifth of the Mexicans tabulated in the 1910 Census were white (again on a basis of comparison with the population of Old Mexico); so that we may say that the peon element of the Census Report increased from 290,738 in 1910 to 323,998 in 1920, while the white element increased from 72,684 in 1910 to 80,999 in 1920 (on the previously mentioned 11.44 percentage of natural increase).

We know, moreover, that the increase by net immigration and its net potential increase for the decade 1910 to 1920 was 135,969 Mexicans. The great majority of these must have been peons. In fact, it is doubtful whether one man in eight among them was pure white. Most of the latter element left Mexico for the United States merely to escape the revolutions, with the clear intention of returning to that country as soon as affairs settled down once more in that unruly land. These recent white immigrants from Mexico settled for the most part in the large cities such as San Antonio, El Paso, Los Angeles, Laredo and even New York and other Eastern cities. 118,973 would represent approximately the peon element.

In addition we must mention the "wetbacks," as the Americans of the Southwest call them, practically all of whom are obviously peons of the lowest class. The immigration authorities have openly admitted that an indeterminable number of these clandestine immigrants swept across the border during the decade of the Great War, in order that they might benefit by the prevailing high wages. Many of them, it is true, have since returned and are still returning to Mexico because of the financial depression attendant upon the period of reconstruction following the War. In fact, there have been cases where the peons have been threatened by American laborers, who endeavor to hasten their departure across the line. However, taken all in all, it seems reasonable to assume that there were at least 139,034, more or less, of this clandestine peon element in the United States in 1920 (the latter being merely an arbitrary figure to round out the estimate



I have set for the entire Mexican element). This estimate appears to be borne out in general by the fact that the increase in the Mexican-born in the decade 1910-1920 was 257,719, according to the 1920 Census. Our estimate of 275,003 for the net immigrant stock for the decade would be offset somewhat by deaths among Mexicans enumerated in 1910.

As for the figure of 1,300,000 representing the total Spanish-American and Mexican element of the Southwest, it may be said that it is the nearest possible estimate for the year 1920. Authorities differ greatly on this question, owing to the fact that the Census Bureau records all American-born persons whose grandparents, great grandparents, etc., were Mexican as "native white of native parentage," irrespective of their color; and also owing to the prevalence of "wetbacks" in the population. Besides, the Mexican equation is distinguished in no set terms; some authorities do not divide the whites of "mixed" parentage, others merely enumerate the "Spanish-speaking" individuals. The most recent view to come to the notice of the writer was that of J. S. Crowell (in his book, "The Near Side of the Mexican Question," 1921), who says that, "The best estimate available . . . indicates that there are approximately 1,500,000 Mexicans and Spanish-Americans in the United States." Whether or not this figure is supposed to include all the many Spanish-speaking persons of part Anglo-Saxon ancestry, the descendants of Spanish creoles of Louisiana and Florida, or even American-born descendants of immigrants from Spain and all parts of Spanish America, we are not given to understand. Apparently, however, this estimate represents Spanish-speaking communities, and is thus not propounded with due consideration of the proportional basis which would divide persons of mixed Mexican-American white ancestry into two quotas, one Mexican and the other American. Also, Mr. Crowell's figures may assume that some 300,000 or more "wetbacks" were in the United States at the period of the 1920 Census, or thereafter, without taking into consideration that many of these clandestine emigrants may have smuggled themselves back into Mexico, unwittingly or otherwise. Therefore we should temper Mr. Crowell's figures with all these considerations in view. At least this author later modifies his original figure of 1,500,000 Mexicans and Spanish-Americans by remarking that, "Whatever the exact numbers may be, their name is 'legion.'" But his figures for certain States appear to be quite reasonable. For instance, he points out that recent estimates of the total population of Mexicans and Spanish-Americans in Texas approximate 450,000; that the Secretary of State's office in New Mexico claims that the State is at present 60 per cent of Spanish or Mexican origin, or 220,000; that it is estimated that Arizona has as many as 100,000; that the Spanish-speaking population of California approaches 250,000; and that thousands of others of Mexican and Spanish-American ancestry are scattered through Colorado, Nevada and Oklahoma, are found in Idaho, Kansas, Indiana, Illinois or Michigan, and have even penetrated to Pennsylvania, New York, New England and other States. Of course most of

the peon element, as Mr. Crowell points out, are generally prevented by monetary considerations from traveling very far from the border.

Altogether, according to the mode of procedure in this survey, we may assume that 1,300,000 represents the proportionate number of the Mexican and Spanish-American element of the Southwest. In the light of all these facts, and the apparently reasonable approximation of the numbers of their descendants in 1920, we may retain the tentative figure of 10,000 as the number of whites in the Southwest in the year 1790.

We may now sum up the results of our somewhat laborious, though necessary, computation as to the population in 1790 of the vast regions which were eventually to be absorbed by the United States, as follows:

	French, French Creole, Acadian, French Canadian	Spanish and Span- ish Creole	Anglo- American and English	Scotch- Irish, Scotch and High- landers	Germans	Totals
Northwest territory and parts of pres- ent Vermont. . . . .	40,000	.....	29,000	2,000	.....	71,000
Illinois country and Western posts. . . .	15,000	.....	2,750	250	.....	18,000
Louisiana and West Florida (Upper and Lower Louisiana) . .	14,000	2,500	6,500	1,000	.....	24,000
Florida (East) . . . .	.....	5,000	1,000	.....	500	6,500
Texas and the Mexi- can Cessions. . . . .	.....	10,000	.....	.....	.....	10,000
Totals. . . . .	69,000	17,500	39,250	3,250	500	129,500

56. In his book, "The New Frontier," Guy Emerson points out that the governing traits of the American people of today can be traced inevitably to the early pioneers who broke the barriers of the Alleghenies and cleared and settled the wilderness of the Middle and Far West. Even now, when material frontiers are gone, the typical American qualities of initiative, self-reliance and individuality remain.

57. Ford, "A History of Illinois."

58. Faris, "On the Trail of the Pioneers," 1920.

59. "The social caste which slavery quickly established in the South repelled . . . all who were not possessed of the wealth which was the credential of entrance within the charmed circle, and drove them out to find homes where no such social bar existed. By a strange law of retribution . . . it was the children of these people who through the mountains of the west Caro-

linas, northern Georgia, east Tennessee and Kentucky were the weakness of the Confederacy in the days when slavery made its strike for a separate national life."—Widney, "Race Life of the Aryan Peoples."

60. Widney, "Race Life of the Aryan Peoples," 1907.

61. It has been said that there were more people in Oklahoma eligible to membership in the Sons of the Revolution than in any other State.

62. It is interesting to note that President Warren G. Harding's ancestor, John Harding of Dunboro, England, came to New England before the middle of the seventeenth century. Two great-great-grandsons migrated to the disastrous Wyoming Valley of northern Pennsylvania in 1774 and there suffered in the terrible June massacre by the Indians. The New England Hardings intermarried with English, Scotch-Irish and Holland Dutch, and the line of Warren G. Harding is in direct descent from these Wyoming Valley and Wilkesbarre Hardings.

63. The Mormons left Nauvoo, Ill., to escape the antagonism of their neighbors in the Mississippi Valley, in 1846. Winter found them spread out in small companies across Iowa. After great privations they eventually arrived on the shore of Great Salt Lake.

64. "Our Three Centuries of Expansion," by William B. Shaw, in the *American Review of Reviews*, November, 1920.

65. See final tabulation for Anglo-Saxons in Chapter V. (i.e., British stock, 51,000,000, Irish and German stock, 4,000,000.) Also final table, Note 87.

66. "What Are Americans?" W. S. Rossiter, chairman of an Advisory Committee to the Director of the Census, in the *Atlantic Monthly*, August, 1920.

67. "From a survey of the irregular data previous to 1819, by Dr. Seybert, Prof. Tucker, and other statisticians, it appears that from 1790 to 1800, about 50,000 Europeans, or 'aliens,' arrived in this country; in the next ten years the foreign arrivals were about 70,000, and in the ten years following, 114,000, ending with 1820. To determine the actual settlers, a deduction of 14.5 per cent from these numbers should probably be made for transient passengers." (Report of the Superintendent of the Eighth Census, 1860.)

Thus subtracting the number of transients, we find that there were probably 42,750 permanent settlers among the immigrants between 1790 and 1800; 59,850 between 1800 and 1810, and 97,470 from 1810 to 1820.

Supposing, from observation of the country's increase, that the increase of the non-immigrant population averaged 35 per cent for each decade, and assuming that the increment of the immigration for each decade was 15 per cent, which figure is most liberal, we find the contribution of the immigrants and their children between 1790 and 1820 to be as follows, at the end of each decade:

1800 .....	49,163
1810 .....	135,608
1820 .....	294,608

Nevertheless, there lies a certain ambiguity in the words "in the ten years following (1810-1820), 114,000, ending with 1820." If the latter means "ending with the year 1820,"—in the sense that the year 1820 is included,—then we should subtract the official tabulation of that year from the reckoning (which should include immigrants before the date of the official figures for 1820.) Moreover, it is possible that our estimated increment for the immigrants is too high. Hence we may set the minimum for the immigrants and their progeny in 1820 at about 250,000.

68. See Louis R. Sullivan's survey and maps in the *American Museum Journal*, October, 1918.

69. Several German families are known to have settled even as far West as Texas (on the banks of the Colorado) as early as 1823. Before 1850 the Germans, with the French, Dutch and Irish, were quite numerous in the city of St. Louis.

"By 1854, 1,500,000 Teutons, mainly from northern Germany, had settled in . . . Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and Missouri." (Wm. Z. Ripley, "The European Population of the United States," *Royal Anthropol. Inst. of Gr. Brit. and Ire.* Vol. XXXVIII, 1908.)

70. Even to this day forty per cent of the population of Jamestown, N. Y., is of Swedish ancestry.

71. In September, 1846, about fifty Hollanders sailed to the United States from the Netherlands. Still other immigrants followed on five ships in the spring of 1847. Other parties came from Zeeland and Vriesland. Thus began an emigration which was to develop into a considerable movement. In 1847 Holland, Michigan, was founded by these pioneers near the little Yankee towns of Grand Haven, Grand Rapids, Saugatuck and Allegan, in close proximity, also, to a band of Ottawa Indians. So unversed were the Dutch newcomers to the rigors of pioneer life that parties of Yankees had to teach them how to chop trees. It was with the spring and summer, however, that great numbers of Dutch began to arrive in Michigan. A hundred came in March alone. The Zeelanders in general settled on the site of what was to become the town of Zeeland. Gradually the Dutch pushed further west, settling in such towns as Pella, Marion County, Iowa; Alto and Cedar Grove, Wisconsin; Chicago, Illinois (in

the suburbs known as Roseland and South Holland); South Lancaster County, Nebraska; and eventually pushed into parts of southeastern Minnesota, Montana, Washington, Canada and even Texas.

See "What the Dutch Have Done in the West of the United States," George Ford Huizinga, 1909.

72. Lord Durham's Report notes the "symptoms of anti-Catholic feeling in New England, well known to the Canadian population," and further remarks that, "the stationary habits and local attachments of the French Canadians render it little likely that they will quit their country in great numbers."

In his article "The European Population of the United States" (Royal Anthropol. Inst. of Gr. Brit. and Ire., Vol. XXXVIII, 1908), William Z. Ripley remarks: "On a vacation trip . . . in the extreme northeastern corner of Pennsylvania, my wife and a friend remarked the frequency of French names of persons, and then of villages, of French physical types and of French cookery. On inquiry it turned out that many settlements had been made by French who emigrated after the Battle of Waterloo. Many such colonies could be named . . . such as the Dutch along the Lake shore of western Michigan, the Germans in Texas, and the Swiss villages in Wisconsin, none of them recent."

73. It should be remembered, however (see Note 74) that the Scotch settlers in Canada, as a general rule, tended to remain permanently in British North America rather than to drift across the border.

74. It has always been a distinctive feature of immigration from the British Isles to North America before 1870 that the Scotch (and the Ulster Scotch) tended to enter British North America in greater proportionate numbers, whereas the English chose the United States and the British West Indies, and the Irish the United States. This circumstance is most important in considering the proportionate number of British nationalities within the immigrant flood from Canada between 1790 and 1870. (See Appendix I, Table VI.)

For convenience, we may divide the immigrants from Canada into two classifications: first, the Canadian-born and, second, the British immigrants.

With respect to the first classification, it may be suggested that there were 147,711 Canadian-born in the United States by the Census of 1850, representing the surviving Canadian-born immigrants after 1790, while in 1870 there were 493,464 Canadian-born in the United States, representing the survivors of Canadian-born immigrants after 1810. Nor do either of these figures take into account the progeny of these Canadian-born immigrants unto several generations. On the other hand, we must assume that a large proportion of these Canadians, with their families, eventually returned to Canada in the movement known as "passing



back and forth across the border." But it is reasonable to suppose that the descendants of this element remaining in the United States must, at a very reasonable estimate, have amounted to at least 400,000 by the year 1920.

It now becomes necessary to make a short historical survey of pioneer conditions before 1830, directing particular attention to the fact that the preponderant Scotch and Scotch-Irish invasion of Canada before 1830 was a movement for settlement in the strictest sense of the word; for which reason the early Scotch element did not seek further adventure in the States and was content to rear its children within the strictly Scottish atmosphere of Upper Canada at that period. Significant proof of this fact is found in the Canadian Census of "origins" in 1900, wherein the Scotch numbered 700,000, and the Irish (including Scotch-Irish), 957,403; whereas the English numbered but 880,000, to whom might be added the majority of some 78,000 from the United States; and all that in spite of the fact that after 1830 the English element had been immigrating in great numbers, while the Scotch and Scotch-Irish increased naturally rather than by immigration in the latter years. (See Appendix I, Table VI.) The foreign-born Census of Canada in 1900, representing the survivors of immigrants between 1840 and 1900, also indicates the preponderance of the English, and, to a lesser degree, the Irish immigrants during that period. In the dreary Red River and Hudson Bay region the Scotch factors ruled the isolated trading posts. The Scotch element dominated the white communities of the far North, with their mixed assortment of French, Icelanders and Swiss (the latter numbering some 250 persons who, being dissatisfied with their lot, later migrated to the Mississippi valley), not to mention many half-breeds as a result of the relations of certain whites with the Indian natives. Much of the race admixture occurred as a result of the intermarriage of post traders with Indian and half-breed women of the Mackenzie River, and whalers mixing with Eskimos of the delta and coast tribes. As a matter of fact the mixed bloods in Canada are a negligible quantity in the population of Canada, albeit the frozen North may harbor strange mixed types for generations to come.

In 1749, 2,500 colonists came to Nova Scotia; three years later 4,000, and between 1759 and 1765 some 7,000 entered that province. Most of these settlers were from New England, but a few came from Ireland and even Germany (Lunenburgers).

In his book, "Immigration from the United Kingdom to North America," Stanley C. Johnson states that from 1761 to 1775 there was an influx to Canada of Scotch (particularly Highlanders), Yorkshire Methodists and New Englanders.

Then fifty or sixty thousand Royalists entered Canada, to join the original population of forty or fifty thousand (mostly French) during and after the Revolutionary War. (See Wrong, "The United States and Canada," 1921.) They represented for the most part patrician English families of the American Colonies, although there were other elements, such as the remnants of Butler's



Rangers who settled in the Niagara district, Dutch aristocrats from the Hudson and Mohawk valleys, German Tories, who settled the banks of the St. Lawrence, families of Royalist Scotch Highlanders and members of Highland regiments. These expatriates, who settled mostly in Nova Scotia, New Brunswick and Ontario, formed the bulk of the United Empire Royalists that to this day are the determining element in Canadian politics. Prominent among the Highland Royalists were Roman Catholic Highlanders who settled the site of Glengarry, which bordered upon Catholic French Canada. After Wolfe's conquest, Highland regiments had settled in Lower Canada and intermarried with French girls, as a result of which it is not unusual even at the present day to find among the French Canucks either Celtic red hair or Highland names. From 1785 to 1799 some other Highland contingents came over to Canada from Great Britain; and during the years between 1813 and 1823 still other Scots arrived from Scotland generally. Indeed there were probably 170,000 Scotch, Scotch-Irish and English immigrants from the British Isles before 1820.

The Mennonites followed closely upon the Royalists, settling the Niagara, Markham and Waterloo colonies, the latter in the valley of the Grand River, and including Berlin.

According to the Census of 1871, the foreign-born from the United Kingdom, including the survivors of immigrants from the British Isles between 1810 and 1871, numbered 144,999 from England, 224,422 from Ireland and 121,074 from Scotland. Among these the greater number of English and Irish appear to have come after 1830, while the Scotch and Scotch-Irish element settled in Canada before 1830 in general. (See Appendix I, Table VI).

The modern population of British North America finds the English particularly in Newfoundland, British Columbia, Alberta, Saskatchewan, Manitoba and Ontario. The Scots are found in Nova Scotia to a great extent and in New Brunswick, and the descendants of Selkirk's Scots in Ontario and Manitoba. The Scotch-Irish are most numerous in Ontario and Manitoba, and the Irish in New Brunswick. American farm settlers vied with the English in settling Alberta, Saskatchewan and British Columbia. A further flood of English and Americans entered the country between 1910 and 1914 and between 1918 and 1920. Incidentally, in 1911 there were only 49,000 Italians and Greeks, 169,000 Slavs, 76,000 Jews, 28,000 Chinese, 9,000 Japanese, 2,300 Hindus and 17,005 Negroes.

From the foregoing historical survey of the early period, we gain the impression that in 1820 Canada must have included about 160,000 New Englanders and Royalists who entered Canada (including their progeny), the great majority being of English origin. Besides these there were 170,000 immigrants, mostly Scotch Highlanders but many of them English and a considerable number Lowland Scotch and Scotch-Irish. Newfoundland was almost wholly English. In other words, the English element in all Brit-

ish North America should have amounted to about 210,000, with the combined Scotch and Scotch-Irish totaling some 120,000. Thus English Canada was by no means entirely "English" in the strict sense of the word. Indeed up to the Census of 1911 in Canada, the Scotch (including Scotch-Irish) element was undoubtedly more numerous in proportion to the total Anglo-Saxon population in Canada than in the British Isles or any of the British dominions.

It was from this "old settler" element of 1820 that probably came the majority of the Canadian-born, or Newfoundland-born, within the borders of the United States in 1870, although it must be admitted that a large number of these Canadian-born must have been children or grandchildren of immigrants who entered Canada between 1820 and 1870. Assuming that 150,000 were included in the latter category, it would seem advisable to relegate this number to our second classification, with the immigrants between 1820 and 1870.

We are thus left to divide the remaining 350,000 into proportions for English and Scotch (including Scotch-Irish) according to their ratio in the population of English Canada for 1820. In other words, the English were 64 per cent of the total, or 160,000, while the Scotch, etc., were 90,000.

We now come to the second classification, which is probably far more important than the first: that is, of British and Irish immigrants who crossed from Canada into the United States, or of the Canadian-born children of immigrants arrived in Canada between 1820 and 1870. In the first place, this was (unlike the immigration of the "old settler" Canadian-born) a permanent immigration in its entirety. That the numbers of these British and Irish immigrants was considerable is shown by the statement in Lord Durham's Report in 1839, since fully sixty per cent of the immigrants into Canada left for the United States. In other words, Canadian immigration after 1830 did not incline to settle and remain in Canada, as was the case with the old established settlers of the earlier years. From 1798 onward a stream of emigrants, mostly Highlanders, left the British Isles for Canada. After Waterloo (1815) English unemployed, English and Lowland Scotch weavers and Roman Catholic Irishmen all contributed their quota. For ten years following the close of the Napoleonic Wars an average of 9,000 emigrants from the United Kingdom entered British North America annually.

"The (immigration) tide set in from about 1820 onwards." (Lord Durham's Report, p. 37, footnote.)

"In the twenties . . . statesmen began to pour streams of Irish English, Lowland and Highland emigrants into the Colonies." (Rogers: Lucas, "The British Colonies." Vol. III.)

"Between 1816 and 1834 emigration from the United Kingdom to British North America was as a rule much larger than to the United States, but with the year 1835 the tide changed and ran strongly in favor of the United States, where the Irish now went

by preference, having previously emigrated, or been assisted to emigrate, largely to British North America. The first imperial grants in aid of emigration seem to have been made in the years 1821, 1823 and 1825 to assist emigrants from the South of Ireland to Canada and the Cape." (Durham Report.)

"In 1823 an attempt to send out emigrants from Cork in Ireland met with opposition and distrust. . . . Their reception . . . at Brockville on the St. Lawrence was cold and disappointing; for Ontario associated Protestantism with loyalty, and the Irish were as faithful to the Catholic Church as the French in Quebec.

"But the new arrivals proved peaceful and industrious. Prosperity soon attended them." (A. W. Tilby, "The English People Overseas," Vol. III, "North America, 1763-1867.")

Thus it would seem that the Catholic Irish element was practically unknown in the Canadas until the decade of the twenties.

"It seems probable that, until 1831, the Irish preferred to settle in British North America rather than in the United States." (Johnson, "Emigration from the United Kingdom to North America.")

"But even in the year 1837, if the figures given in an Appendix to Eliot's Report are correct, out of 29,884 emigrants who left the United Kingdom for British North America the emigrants from Irish ports numbered 22,463 against 7,241 from Great Britain; while out of 36,770 who left for the United States, they numbered 3,871 against 32,899 from Great Britain." (Sir Henry Lucas, Lord Durham's Report, Part I, p. 190.)

Hand loom weavers from England swelled the total to Canada between 1815 and 1830.

In 1823 "the farms of Sussex were . . . drawn upon for settlers." Indeed, "the departure of so great a multitude of men from the motherland was some loss to rural Britain." (A. W. Tilby, "The English People Overseas," Vol. III.) During the twenties, over ten thousand a year left the British Isles for British North America.

"Another agricultural depression overtook the country at the beginning of the thirties.

"Kent, Cheshire, Derbyshire, Hampshire, Somersetshire and Surrey furnished the greatest numbers sailing from England, but the depression must be considered general throughout Ireland and the North of Scotland." (Johnson, "Emigration From the United Kingdom to North America.") From 1830 to 1832 at least 100,000 departed from the British Isles for British North America.

A table compiled (Johnson) from figures given in Lord Durham's Report indicates that there were 127,422 passengers received for examination at the immigration station at Grosse Isle from the years 1833 to 1838 inclusive. From 1825 to 1831 a yearly average of 20,000 emigrants from the British Isles arrived in British North America. In 1831 there were 50,254, and in 1832 (when Lord Egremont started his emigration scheme at Petworth, in Sussex 50,746 arrived. In 1833 the total dropped to 21,752, but rose to 30,935 in 1834. In 1835 it decreased to 12,527, rose

to 27,728 in 1836, descended once more to 22,500 and in 1838 fell to the ridiculously low figure of 4,992, as the result of certain conditions in Canada.

"By an act passed, difficulties are thrown in the way of employment of capital in banking. . . . Under the system, also, of selling land pursued by the Government, an individual does not acquire a patent for his land until he has paid the whole of the purchase-money, a period of from four to ten years . . . and until the patent issues he has no right to vote. . . . It is very possible that there are but few cases in which the departure of an Englishman from Upper Canada to the States can be traced directly to any of these circumstances in particular; yet the state of society and of feeling which they have engendered, has been among the main causes of the great extent of re-emigration to the new States of the Union. . . . The native Canadians, however, . . . appear to be unanimous in the wish to preserve these exclusive privileges. . . .

"Of the many thousand emigrants who, within the last few years, have arrived from Great Britain, scarcely 1,000 have settled in the townships of Lower Canada; but great numbers of them have gone into the United States, considering . . . that they should find themselves in a less foreign country.

"The population (of Upper Canada) was reckoned at 200,000 in January, 1830. The increase by births since then should have been at least three per cent per annum, or 54,000. Mr. Hawke states the number of immigrants from Lower Canada since 1829 to have been 165,000; allowing that these also would have increased at the rate of three per cent per annum, the whole increase of immigration and births should have been nearly 200,000. But Mr. Hawke's estimate of immigrants takes no account of the very considerable number that enter the Province by way of New York and the Erie Canal. Reckoning these at only 50,000, which is probably under the truth, and making no allowance for their increase by births, the entire population of Upper Canada should now have been 500,000, whereas it is, according to the most reliable estimates, not over 400,000 (in 1839, 409,048). It would therefore appear, making all allowances for errors in this calculation, that the number of people who have emigrated from Upper Canada to the United States, since 1829, must be equal to more than half of the number who have entered the Province during the eight years." (Durham Report.)

Thousands are known to have been assisted to emigrate from England to Canada between 1836 and 1846 (see Johnson, p. 89), not to mention unassisted emigration. In 1836 the assisted emigrants were from Yorkshire, Buckinghamshire, Huntingdonshire. (Johnson.) Between 1847 and 1854, 356,044 people left Ireland for British North America (Johnson), as a result of the potato famine, while nearly 150,000 came from Great Britain. (Total from United Kingdom in interval between 1846 and 1854, 500,000—Johnson.)

Between 1853 and 1860, 26,537 English, 24,850 Scotch and 56,-



595 Irish came into Canada, while between 1861 and 1870, 65,890 English, 24,340 Scotch and 40,080 Irish arrived. (See Appendix I, Table VI.)

We may now sum up the immigration stream from the British Isles to Canada as follows:

Before 1840 there were 499,899 arrivals, of whom some 100,000 came between 1820 and 1830, and about 230,000 entered in the decade 1830 to 1840. Before 1820, as we have pointed out, the larger part of the immigrants appear to have been Scotch and Scotch-Irish, but by the decade of the twenties the proportion of English appears to have rivaled that of the Scotch, and the Catholic Irish were replacing the Protestant Irish among the immigrants. The English were probably most numerous in the decade of the thirties, with the Irish Celts increasing and the Scotch Highlanders also numerous. (It was in 1839 that Lord Durham made the statement in his Report that fully sixty per cent of the immigration into Canada was passing on into the United States. "The value of land was one thousand per cent higher in the Republic than in Canada; and more than half the British immigrants into Ontario are said to have deserted that province for the better opportunities to be found further South." "The system of education was so bad that many of the British settlers in Ontario emigrated to the United States solely for the purpose of educating their children." (A. W. Tilby. "The English People Overseas," Vol. III). In the decade of the forties the Irish took the lead among the immigrants; but many English and some Scotch also emigrated to British North America. In the decade of the fifties the Irish equalled the total of English and Scotch; but in the ten years following the English once more took the lead and thereafter became the vastly predominant element in the immigration stream. (See Appendix I, Table VI). By 1900 the Irish, Scotch-Irish and Anglo-Irish numbered 957,403; the English, 880,000; and the Scotch, 700,000 (according to the Canadian Census of "origins." There were also 77,753 of American stock.) It is obvious that the Scotch and Scotch-Irish immigrant element of the years before 1830 had grown enormously, without considerable immigration, between 1830 and 1900. Certainly the later Irish Catholic immigration could not alone have supplied the immense Irish total in 1900. On the other hand, with a very important immigration of the later decades, it does not seem that the increase of the early Royalist element kept pace with the increase of the Scotch and Scotch-Irish. Of course, many Scotch and others were included with the predominant English among the Royalists, but that does not wholly explain the phenomenon. The only other supposition is that the English immigrants comprised the bulk of the immigrants or their descendants who left Canada for the United States, or that the descendants of the Royalists themselves, dwelling along the North bank of the St. Lawrence were more prone to cross into the States than was the case with their Scotch and Scotch-Irish fellow-citizens. Moreover, this supposition goes far to explain another undeniable phenomenon, namely the distinctive "Scotch" atmos-

phere to be found in certain parts of Canada during the past generations. We have already pointed out the disinclination of the old established Highlander and Ulster populations of Canada to leave their Canadian environment. Indeed it is difficult to believe that the Highland and Ulster stock in Canada could have retained the Scotch and Scotch-Irish character for so long a period had their number been drained by emigration into the United States, particularly when it is considered that immigration from Ulster and the Highlands, each with its lone million of population, could not keep pace with the immigration of a later day from England, and Ireland generally. Whatever the psychology that attracted the Scotch to British North America for permanent settlement (possibly, for one reason, that parts of the Canadian topography or climate reminded them of Scotland; or because pioneer conditions appealed to the instinct of the pugnacious Highland strain), it is nevertheless this undeniable tendency of the Scotch to abide in Canada that makes it unlikely that the Scotch contributed more than a minor share to the influx of Canadian-born passing into the Republic. Certainly it is true, in comparing the records of immigration into Canada and the United States (see Appendix I, Table VI and Note 87) between 1790 and 1870, the English emigrants always showed a decided preference for the United States, in marked contrast to the Scotch and Scotch-Irish immigrants, who generally settled in Canada. The reason for this is more or less problematical, but it is an undeniable fact. Hence it follows that among the immigrants who passed into the United States the English were present in a proportion far greater than would be suggested by their comparative numbers emigrating from the British Isles to Canada. In some respects the Catholic Irish must have been inclined to leave British North America for the United States in proportionately large numbers. Lord Durham is reticent about the amount of Irish Catholic immigration from Canada to the United States, but it was remarked that many Irish inhabit New York State. (Durham Report, p. 267.)

Hence, taking all these factors into consideration, we may assume that the English comprised sixty per cent of the element represented by British emigrants, or Canadian-born children or grandchildren of British emigrants, who crossed from Canada into the United States; the Irish, thirty per cent of this element; and the Scotch, Scotch-Irish and Welsh, ten per cent. Combining our estimates of 300,000 for the descendants of British emigrants and 110,000 for the descendants of Canadian-born children and grandchildren, we have a total of 450,000 for this element in the year 1920. Dividing the latter total proportionately, according to the percentages, we find the English to number about 270,000, the Irish, 135,000 and the Scotch, etc., 45,000.

Then, amalgamating the figures obtained for our first and second classifications of immigration from British North America to the United States, we find the English element probably amounted to about 430,000; the Scotch-Irish, Lowland Scotch, etc., to 135,000; and the Celtic Irish also to 135,000.



75. A record which appears to bear out the indication of the limited part played by the Southern Irish in the Revolution, and at the same time demonstrates the fact that the great majority of the Irishmen who played so prominent a part in the Revolution were of the same Scotch-Irish strain as those Ulstermen who now so stoutly resist home rule for Ireland, is the original membership list of the Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick, organized in Philadelphia during the Revolutionary period, which contains close to a hundred names, of which only thirteen can be judged as of South of Ireland lineage.

76. Possibly this estimate of Ireland's contribution to the immigration from the United Kingdom between 1830 and 1840 is a trifle too high. Most of the 40,000 immigrants in the two years 1826 to 1827 alone came as a result of commercial depression in England. British reports on the year 1837 show that of the 36,770 emigrants who left for the United States, 32,899 were from Great Britain and only 3,871 from Ireland.

77. See "Emigration from the United Kingdom to North America," Stanley C. Johnson, 1914.

Probably more than half of the Irish immigration was from Ulster until about 1840, judging from all standpoints; yet the burden of proof is on those who would assert the predominance of persons of Scottish or English strain among the Irish immigrants.

78. Maguire, "The Irish in America."

79. See footnote of table in Note 87, and footnote, Note 91.

80. See footnote of table in Note 101.

"The German Jews began their migration in small numbers during Colonial times, but their greatest influx followed the Napoleonic wars and reached its height at the middle of the century (1850) . . . so predominant were the German Jews that to the ordinary American, all Jews were Germans." (John R. Commons, "Races and Immigrants in America.")

81. See "Italian Emigration of Our Times," Robert F. Foster, 1919.

82. Even in the early years these Italian "birds of passage" in many cases made various trips to and fro between Italy and America, and hence one individual might have been counted anywhere from two to six times in the immigration records! Fred-eric J. Haskin, in his book, "The Immigrant: An Asset and A Liability" (1913) says, "More than half the . . . Italians . . . return to their native homes, and inquiries show that perhaps two-thirds of all who go never return again."

83. See Note 55.

84. Not until 1910 was a census of two generations of the

foreign stock taken, and a certain number of the grandchildren or even, perhaps, great-grandchildren of such of the earlier immigrants as may be included in the census of foreign stocks are not themselves tabulated with the foreign stock, but are considered as "native of native parentage" in Census Bureau statistics. Moreover, we must take into account the progeny in the third, fourth, etc., generations descended from sires, now deceased, who emigrated within some eight decades after 1790. For instance, the 250,000 immigrants between 1790 and 1820, with their augmentation, must have increased about five-fold by the year 1920. Incidentally it must be realized that it was only in 1899 that the Immigration Bureau commenced the classification of arriving aliens according to race or people; and not until 1908 that emigrant aliens were counted at all.

85. After all, as we shall later point out, mere numbers of any particular ancestral element is no infallible indication of race, or even of social, religious or political attributes; nor are the questions of race and nationality to be broached one for the other. The day will come when an anthropological survey of the United States will bring far greater satisfaction to students seeking knowledge of the racial entity of the American people than can the most extended research as to the immigrant contributions to our population. Already Dr. Charles B. Davenport, one of the foremost students of heredity in the world, has had the eugenics record office at Cold Spring Harbor, New York, in operation for some ten years, during which time the detailed histories and characters of about fifty thousand persons have been transposed into formulas of heredity. Meanwhile, however, we must be content with gaining a measure of conviction from the knowledge that the average person of any certain nationality, or rather immigrant element, shows the preponderating physical and hereditary characteristics of a well-defined racial type. Hence we may gain some interesting ideas and approximations as to the racial makeup of any certain element in our population, as for example the descendants of immigrants between 1790 and 1860, by merely arriving at an arbitrary estimate derived from such immigration figures as are at our disposal.

86. The 250,000 immigrants (including augmentation) between 1790 and 1820 must have doubled to 500,000 by 1845, and 502,000 must have increased to 1,210,000 by 1920. The some 2,100,000 immigrants between 1818 and 1845 and their descendants must have doubled to 6,000,000 by 1885, and the latter figure increased 21 per cent or to 6,250,000 by 1920. The remaining 2,600,000 would represent descendants of immigrants between 1845 and 1850, (based on the estimates of increase for New Englanders by J. Gardner Bartlett, of the New England Genealogical Society. See Note 17).

87. At first glance it might appear that a fair estimate could be made of the proportion of each ancestral element in the total number of the white immigrant stock of the early period, by dividing this total proportionately according to the ratio of each nationality among the immigrants between 1790 and 1860. Yet

closer inspection would demonstrate the utter futility of such a plan. For it must be remembered that the number of descendants of any given ancestry must have increased relatively and proportionately, according to the remoteness of their progenitors and the contemporary rate of increase of population during the period in which their ancestors came over in greatest numbers. For example, the immigration before 1820, as we have previously remarked, was almost wholly English. Even in the latter year the Germans, who were to rapidly increase in numbers in the succeeding decades, were only a trifle more than one-ninth of the total number of immigrants. The two hundred thousand or more English immigrants between 1790 and 1820 are not to be compared in numbers to the immigration of comparatively modern decades; yet this earliest Anglo-Saxon immigration came at a period during which the country's rate of increase of population was phenomenal. On the other hand, there were practically no Irish Catholic immigrants before 1820, and although there came a rapidly increasing stream of Irish between 1820 and 1840, it was not until the latter year that they began to assume truly great proportions. From that time on, however, the rate of increase of the country had reached its maximum and was soon to start on a decline. The Irish-born reached their maximum numbers in the decade of 1850 to 1860; yet by far the greater number of Irish arrived in the much less prolific years after 1860. The Germans did not reach their maximum numbers until shortly after 1880, and comparatively few of them came early enough to profit numerically by the abnormal increase of the country's population before 1850. The greater part of the Scandinavians came at an even later period than the Irish and Germans. From all of which we may judge that we must take into account the net potential increase of the immigrants for each decade, as well as their actual numbers, in order to arrive at a computation of the numbers of survivors or descendants in 1920 of the immigrants between 1790 and 1880.

Following will be found the figures for the estimated number of immigrants of various ancestral strains, according to country of origin, for each decade since 1790; accompanied by the tentative figures representing what would have been the approximate numbers of each foreign element had there been no emigration from the United States. The latter computation is arrived at by figuring the increase for each successive decade according to the rate of increase of the country's population for each decade, adding thereto the respective amount of immigration for each decade. Of course the rate of increase of the country's total population for each decade included in this case the immigration itself. But, on the other hand, we have made no attempt to estimate the natural increase of the arrivals themselves in any particular decade, so that the few extra percentage points would be practically offset. We are given here a merely tentative potential increase of the so-called "old" immigrant stock, of both early and modern period, which has no basis in actual fact, though, since it does not take into consideration emigration and its counter-acting influence.

[Immigration figures are from the reports of the Bureau of Statistics, based on reports of the Immigration Bureau and early customs reports.]

Decade	Census Increase of the Nation	ENGLAND AND WALES				SCOTLAND				IRELAND*				BRITISH NORTH AMERICA	
		England		Wales		Immi- gration		Qualified Increase		Ulster		Southern Ireland			
		Immi- gration	Qualified Increase	Immi- gration	Qualified Increase					Immi- gration	Qualified Increase	Immi- gration	Qualified Increase		
1790-1800	35.1%	F 220,000	F 220,000	.....	.....	.....	.....	F 15,000	F 15,000	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
1800-1810	36.4	(Est.)	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	(Est.)	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
1810-1820	33.1	+21,929	315,629	+238	.....	2,912	2,912	10,000	30,025	40,724	40,724	2,277	2,277	.....	2,277
1820-1830	33.5	+71,619	490,459	+1,524	.....	2,667	6,531	60,000	99,843	147,381	147,381	13,624	13,624	.....	16,646
1830-1840	32.7	+253,204	918,266	+10,128	.....	3,712	11,568	78,000	213,387	702,719	702,719	41,723	41,723	.....	64,295
1840-1850	35.6	+376,237	1,621,406	+9,406	.....	38,331	54,017	91,000	380,353	823,119	2,146,368	59,309	59,309	.....	146,493
1850-1860	35.6	+555,777	2,543,621	+12,351	.....	38,768	104,993	43,000	509,313	392,778	3,024,225	153,871	153,871	.....	333,471
1860-1870	22.6	+453,805	3,765,600	+6,674	.....	87,564	224,265	43,000	706,126	393,871	4,331,412	383,269	383,269	.....	817,448
1870-1880	30.2	+644,325	5,370,153	+13,163	.....	149,869	431,322	65,000	951,188	590,482	6,026,404	392,802	392,802	.....	1,418,699
1880-1890	25.5	271,094	6,752,869	11,186	.....	60,053	580,659	40,000	1,188,084	363,496	7,637,366	2,631	2,631	.....	1,715,001
1890-1900	20.7	388,017	8,558,989	17,464	.....	120,469	823,066	40,000	1,477,582	299,065	9,540,278	179,226	179,226	.....	2,254,377
1900-1910	21.0	236,009	9,710,820	12,481	.....	73,684	984,818	14,000	1,649,683	127,386	10,688,474	697,173	697,173	.....	3,192,768
1910-1920	10.7														

Decade	Census Increase of the Nation	GERMANY		AUSTRIA } be- HUNGARY } fore RUSSIA } 1880s ††	SWITZERLAND† ††	FRANCE	HOLLAND and BELGIUM	SCANDINAVIA	
		Immig- ration	Qualified Increase	Immig- ration	Qualified Increase	Immig- ration	Qualified Increase	Immig- ration	Qualified Increase
1790-1800	35.1%	F	F						
1800-1810	36.4	+15,000	+15,000						
1810-1820	33.1	(Est.)							
1820-1830	33.5	6,761	26,786	3,148	3,148	8,497	1,105	260	260
1830-1840	32.7	152,454	187,999	4,430	8,607	45,575	1,434	2,264	2,609
1840-1850	35.6	434,626	689,553	4,819	16,490	77,262	13,327	14,442	17,980
1850-1860	35.6	951,667	1,886,701	24,123	46,483	76,358	15,527	24,680	49,061
1860-1870	22.6	787,468	3,100,563	21,424	78,412	35,984	15,836	126,392	186,541
1870-1880	30.2	718,182	4,755,115	25,212	127,304	72,206	23,762	106,530	485,892
1880-1890	25.5	1,452,970	7,420,639	81,151	231,018	50,464	73,878	656,494	1,266,288
1890-1900	20.7	543,922	9,500,633	37,020	292,757	36,006	51,878	289,560	1,907,023
1900-1910	21.0	341,498	11,837,264	32,541	386,777	73,379	89,897	440,265	2,812,822
1910-1920	10.7†	143,446	13,247,297	21,199	449,361	57,425	71,584	558,957	3,310,524

Grand Total, 1920.....45,434,471



\*The Scotch-Irish probably amounted to almost 20 per cent of the total number of Irish arrivals between 1820 and 1830; and possibly 30 per cent of the total Irish arriving in the decade following. Although we lack exact figures as to the number of Scotch-Irish among immigrants from Ireland, every indication is that Irish immigrants arriving before 1840 were not overwhelmingly of the Catholic faith (see text and Note Seventy-eight). Certain it is that Irish immigrants arriving between 1830 and 1840 were not of the "Molly Maguire" type as a whole. In fact, it would appear that at least a large part of these Irish were quickly assimilated with the American population, a circumstance which gives further rise to the belief that the Protestant element was quite strong. Moreover, our surmise is still further strengthened by the fact that even a decade afterward, in 1850, when the Catholic element was commencing to gain great force, Ulster was still contributing a very large part of the exodus from Ireland, judging from British emigration records. After 1840, however, the Irish element did not assimilate so readily and, as pointed out elsewhere, the Scotch-Irish probably amounted to no more than 10 per cent of the Irish immigrants. (See footnote \* Note 91.)

§ Natural increase (exclusive of net immigration).

¶ Approximate figures, June 1919-Jan. 1920.

F See Note 67.

\*At the beginning of the century it (immigration) was slight. Almost the only emigrants were from Great Britain and a few from Germany. The difficulties of travel were so great and the knowledge of new countries was so vague that very few persons in the more backward and less maritime countries had the courage to attempt the long and arduous journey.

From Great Britain the number of emigrants for the year 1815 was only 2,081. The next year it rose to 12,510, in 1817 to 20,634, in 1818 to 27,787 and in 1819 to 34,787. These were dark days in England. . . . (Smith, "Emigration and Immigration," 1892.)

The Scotch-Irish came "after 1820 until just before the Revolution." (See "History of the World," Grolier Society, Vol. 12, p. 6099.) Evidently their numbers were unnoteworthy after 1790.

In its pamphlet in 1903 (p. 4336), the Bureau of Statistics puts the total number of arrivals between 1776 and 1820, prior to the official count, at not to exceed 250,000. This obviously does not include the augmentation by rate of increase.

Even contemporaneous viewpoints, such as those of Blodget and Adam Seybert, give little information as to the immigrants between 1790 and 1820. The latter, in his "Statistical Annals Embracing Views of the Population . . . of the United States of America Founded on Official Documents," Vol. I, p. 28, published in 1818, offers the following (with identical punctuation):

"The emigrants came principally from Great Britain, Ireland and Germany; but few have, hitherto, arrived from other countries. In 1794, the emigrants, who arrived during that year, were estimated at ten thousand (Cooper's information respecting America. London 1795) and in 1806, Mr. Blodget said, from 'the best records and estimates at present attainable, the emigrants who arrived in the United States did not average more than 4,000 per annum, for the ten preceding years.' (Blodget's Statistical Manual p. 75). In 1794, the people in Great Britain were very much disposed to come to the United States; but this current was soon checked, by the acts of the British government. Though we admit, that ten thousand foreigners may have arrived in the United States in 1794; we cannot allow that they did so, in an equal number, in any preceding or subsequent year, until 1817. (In 1816, the disposition to emigrate from Great Britain to the United States, was again impeded by an act of the Parliament. British and foreign vessels were only allowed to carry passengers, from Great Britain and Ireland to the United States, in the proportion of one passenger for every five tons, whereas the British vessels were permitted to convey them, to other countries, in the proportion of one for every two tons. In 1817, the foreign journals announced that the Hessian government had caused many of its subjects, who were about to emigrate, to be arrested on the frontiers, and that they were afterward imprisoned in Cassel). There were many difficulties in the way of the emigrants . . . In 1817, the emigrants were, probably, more numerous than in any preceding year. The following statement shows the number of the passengers who arrived in ten of the principal ports of the United States, from the 1st of January, to the 31st of December, 1817.

Great Britain and Ireland	11,977
British North America	2,901
West Indies	1,569
Germany and Holland	4,169



France.....	1,245
Italy.....	58
All Other.....	321
Total.....	22,240

"The free population could only be affected by the emigrants from Europe; we will suppose that 6,000 of them arrived annually from 1790 to 1810. In 1790 the free population of the United States amounted to 3,223,629 persons, and in 1810 it was 6,048,539; the actual increase in the twenty years, was 2,824,910, from which deduct 120,000, for the emigrants who arrived during that period, and allow for their increase at the extraordinary rate of 5 per cent. per annum, or 60,000 for the twenty years, making the aggregate from the emigrant stock 180,000, which, when deducted from the total actual increase above mentioned, will leave 2,644,910 persons for the augmentation, independent of any aid from abroad; or the duplication of the free inhabitants, without the additions from the emigrants, would only require about four-fifths of a year more than it did when they were added. The preceding view satisfies us that, during twenty years, our population has been immaterially augmented by the emigrants."

"In an unpublished study of this question Mr. J. L. Leonard of Yale University finds this estimate probably too small, and thinks that the figure 345,000 would come nearer to representing the total number of immigrants from 1784 to 1810."—Henry P. Fairchild, "Immigration," 1913.

In 1787 the author of a paper read before the society for political inquiries at the house of Dr. Franklin speaks of "Pennsylvania, swelling hourly with arrivals of honest, industrious Germans and others." (See Henry P. Fairchild, "Immigration," 1913.) From which it would appear that several thousand German immigrants of 1817 (a banner year) were a noteworthy vanguard of non-Anglo-Saxons. Be it noted, also, that in 1820, the number of German immigrants had again declined to less than a thousand, while in 1822 and 1823 there were but 148 and 183 immigrants respectively. Thus, while we may merely surmise as to the strength of the German immigration between 1790 and 1820, the indications are that it was relatively small as compared to the numbers from the British Isles, or, more particularly, England.

O If I have been remiss in supposing the Irish Catholic element to be negligible before 1820, I have been somewhat generous in the supposition that the Celts formed over four-fifths of the Irish immigration between 1820 and 1830, when, as a matter of opinion, they may have amounted to only half the Irish influx of that decade. (See footnote \*). Besides, I probably overestimated the number of Irish Catholics within the "old stock." (See Table, Chap. I and Note 40.)

† The "Statistical Abstract of the United States" (1919) includes within a single figure for each decade before 1890 the combined English element, Welsh element and estimated number of English and Welsh within the "unspecified" element from the British Isles. However, in the Senate Documents, Volume 20 ("Statistical Review of Immigration, 1820 to 1910") are to be found the specified totals for English and Welsh separately for each year or decade after 1820. From these figures we can deduce the information that one man out of every ninety-four immigrants in the total of English and Welsh for the decade 1820-1830 was a Welshman; one out of every forty-eight for the decade 1830-1840; one out of every twenty-six in the decade 1840-1850; one out of every forty-one in the decade 1850-1860; one out of every forty-six in the decade 1860-1870; one out of every sixty-nine in the decade 1870-1880; and one out of every fifty in the decade 1880-1890, was Welsh. Thus we may apply these ratios to find the proportion of English and Welsh in the total estimate for both "specified" and estimated "unspecified" English and Welsh combined element given in the Statistical Abstract. (See Appendix I, Table IV.)

\*\* Of these 41,559 would represent the Belgian element, by the same method of computation.

†† Early Austrian, Hungarian, Bohemian, Russian, Polish and Swiss immigrants were generally of German, Hebrew or (in the case of Russia) Scandinavian speech.

† In his "Statistical Annals" of 1818, Adam Seybert declares that 1,245 persons from France entered ten ports of the United States in the year 1817. Many of these were probably influential travelers who eventually may have returned to France, while a majority, or a large proportion, of those who stayed in America must have been Alsations of German stock, who had been dissatisfied with French domination. In any event a ten-fold increase for the true French among those who remained (up to 1920) would be practically negligible. (French immigration decreased one-half after Germany regained Alsace-Lorraine in 1870.)

x Perhaps one-sixth of the Swiss immigrants are French-speaking.

According to W. W. Husband ("Significance of Emigration," *Amer. Econ. Rev. Supplement*, March, 1912), "Immigration to the United States has always produced a return movement of greater or less importance. This was true of the Irish, German and other European immigration of the last century."

We already know the figure for the "old immigrant white stock of the early period," which is 10,104,955 (see text), within which are included 20,000 Italians and 12,000 white Mexicans already discussed. For the moment we will eliminate the 32,000 Italians and Mexicans, leaving 10,072,955. Also, as we are about to show, we can determine the modern immigrant stock from the countries given in the gross immigration table. It is obvious that the combined total of the early immigrant stock of the countries given in the gross table represents the corresponding net immigrant stock for 1920, and the difference between the net and gross totals would represent, in the main, the loss to the country by emigration from the United States to those regions. Unfortunately, however, the immigration figures for British North America for the early period can be shown to be practically worthless. Indeed the combined figure for English and French Canada in the Census of foreign stocks (only two generations) in 1910 plus an increase of 11.44 per cent, not to mention the net immigration, was actually considerably greater than the figure for 1920 in our gross table. This discrepancy is due in part to the fact that thousands of persons from English Canada poured into the United States during the early decades without being recorded by our customs officials. Further proof that the figures for the early immigration from Canada to the United States are inaccurate, can be found in the fact that the chart of the Immigration Bureau records less than 160,000 immigrants from Canada (permanent or transitory) before 1870 (1865-1870), whereas the United States Census Bureau tabulated 493,464 Canadian-born alone in 1870, not to mention the influx of persons born in the British Isles who entered the United States by way of Canada. In fact, so great is the disparity between Census and Immigration figures that we are justified in assuming an arbitrary number, such as 700,000 (see Note 74) to represent the descendants in 1920 of immigrants from British North America in the early period. This estimate takes into account the larger ratio of emigrants to immigrants than holds true of the return tide to European nations. There has always been much "passing back and forth" over the Canadian border. This 700,000 has already been determined to have included probably some 430,000 English and Anglo-Irish, 135,000 Celtic Irish and 135,000 Lowland Scotch, Scotch-Irish, etc. (See Note 74.) Subtracting this 700,000 from the 10,072,955 given above, we have a remainder of 9,372,955 representing the total of other nationalities of the early period, yet to be determined.

The net immigrant stock from the other countries named in the gross immigrant table, for the modern period only, is as follows:

## Net Increase, Decade 1910-1920 \*\*

Country	Foreign stock census of 1910 (See Appendix I, Table II)	Natural increase (11.44 per cent.) (See Note 38)	Net Immigration			Net Potential Increase of Immigrants for the Decade			Total 1920 (by adding net increases to 1910 figure)
			Immigration for the decade (See Appendix I, Table V-A)	Emigration for the decade (See Appendix I, Table V-B)	Net immigration	Approximate natural increase of immigrants arriving during the decade, according to descending percentage scale. (See Appendix I, Table V-A)	Approximate potential natural increase (loss to U. S.) of emigrants departed during the decade, according to descending percentage scale (See App. I, Table V-B)	Net potential increase of immigrants admitted during the decade	
England	2,206,625	252,438	245,817	51,755	194,062	16,057	2,721	13,336	2,666,461
Scotland and Wales	905,829	103,627	90,834	15,152	75,682	6,165	883	5,282	1,090,420
Ulster	424,856	48,614	14,766	1,965	12,801	998	109	889	487,160
Ireland (S.)	3,823,699	437,431	132,890	17,680	115,210	8,979	985	7,994	4,384,334
Germany and Switzerland	8,837,435	1,011,003	171,955	26,062	145,893	12,240	2,089	10,151	10,004,482
France	343,295	39,273	58,975	33,076	25,899	3,375	1,603	1,772	410,239
Holland and Belgium	403,687	46,182	74,300	11,015	63,285	4,672	584	4,088	517,242
Scandinavia	2,868,600	328,168	206,966	39,787	167,179	13,129	1,909	11,220	3,375,167

Total ..... 22,935,505

\*\*See footnote \*\* of table in Note 91.

It is obvious that if we add the 22,935,505 net immigration of the modern period to the 9,372,955 net immigration, the sum, which is 32,308,460, represents the total net immigration from the countries given in the gross immigrant table, exclusive of British North America. Also, we know the proportion of each country in the total gross immigration, exclusive of British North America. Hence it stands to reason that those percentages would apply to the net immigration, exclusive of British North America, provided, of course, that the proportion of emigration to immigration was uniform with respect to the various countries under discussion. But in the case of Germany (including Switzerland, and the early immigration from the Russian Empire and Austria-Hungary), Scandinavia, and Holland (including Belgium) these percentages would be 32 per cent, 8 per cent and 1 per cent respectively of the 32,308,460 net immigration, or 10,338,707 for Germany, etc., 2,584,677 for Scandinavia and 323,085 for Holland and Belgium. Yet we know that the figures of the modern period alone for Germany, etc., Scandinavia and Holland, etc., were respectively 10,004,482, 3,364,191 and 569,984. In other words, there is a marked discrepancy in the figures for these nationalities, whereas in the case of the British Isles and France no such apparent discrepancy appears.

There are several possible reasons for this incongruity. In the first place, most of the immigrant nationalities had a surplus of males. In the figures for the modern period, persons of mixed parentage are classified according to the country of origin of the father (see Appendix I, footnote Table II). Obviously this would inflate the figures for certain nationalities in the net immigrant stock. On the other hand, our gross immigrant table makes no such distinction. For example, we judged that there were perhaps 485,892 persons and their progeny from Scandinavia in Continental United States in 1880 (see gross immigrant table), whereas, according to an official "general estimate" (see the Census Report of 1880) there might have been as many as 635,405 persons in that year whose fathers were born in Scandinavia. In other words, those whose mothers were born in Scandinavia were relatively few.

But even more important, perhaps, is the second reason, which seems to be proven in this instance, that emigration from the United States back to the country of origin is smaller in the case of some nationalities than of others. Thus the evident preponderance of Germans, Scandinavians and Hollanders and Belgians in the net immigrant stock of the modern period, as compared to their total immigration, is probably attributable in the main to the circumstance of a relatively small ebb-flow rather than to any prodigious rate of increase.

Yet it is very likely that the Germans and Scandinavians were prone to have large families. They moved to the country districts, where the birth rate was correspondingly high. Germans and Scandinavians (as in the case of Irish immigrants) were largely in the productive stages of manhood and womanhood. In the case of the Germans the tendency was to immigrate by



families, whereas the tendency in Scandinavia and Ireland was for youths of either sex to emigrate when single. Still, in either case, the number of persons of productive age assured the prevalence of the marital tie. In the early years after 1867, when Scandinavian immigration began to gather momentum, the male sex still predominated considerably in that element, but in later years the influx of Scandinavian housegirls struck a better balance in the proportion of the sexes.

Then again, an unknown number of Germans and Scandinavians entered the United States through Canada, who were born in Germany and Scandinavia but are not credited to those countries in the immigration statistics.

Lastly, it is barely possible, even if improbable, that the arbitrary figure of 15,000 for the German immigrants (including their augmentation) between 1790 and 1820 is too small. For instance, if there had been as many as 50,000 they might have increased at least ten-fold, or to about 500,000 in 1920. At any rate, in according a higher figure to the Germans in the total that follows, we are somewhat influenced by this consideration. The fact remains that the net German, Scandinavian and Dutch-Flemish immigrant stock of the modern period is actually larger than the total early and modern immigration figures and a normal rate of increase would indicate. Hence we may infer that the net immigrant stock of the early period for those nationalities is larger than the ratio to the immigration for all combined nationalities would indicate.

After all, we may assume, after carefully studying the figures of immigration before 1850 or 1860, from these respective countries, that the proportion for Germany, Switzerland, etc., must be at least 35 per cent of the 32,308,460 net immigrant stock, or 11,307,961; for Scandinavia must be about 10.55 per cent, or 3,408,543; and for Holland and Belgium 1.7 per cent, i.e., 549,244 or thereabouts. When we come to subtract the respective figures for the modern period, we find the result for the early period to be as follows: Germany, Switzerland, etc., 1,303,479 (including 375,000 Jews already estimated); Scandinavia, 33,376; Holland and Belgium, 32,002. Some statisticians might insist that these proportions should be larger. But the burden of proof would be upon them; for we have no means of knowing that the proportions were greater than as given here, or indeed that the numbers for these nationalities were not actually negligible.

In the case of the remaining nationalities we have no clues to show that the ebb-flow was greater in the case of one nationality than another. It is perhaps true that (according to the Report of the Superintendent of the Seventh Census in 1850) among the Irish "the expectation of life was low in their own land, being at the age of 25, only 32 years... where, in the English table... the expectation of that age is 37 years." On the other hand, the large birth rate among Irish immigrants would have materially offset a high death rate.

Hence we may divide the 17,042,712 remaining for the net immigrant total (after subtracting the German, Swiss, Scandinavian,



Dutch and Belgian elements) proportionately, according to the ratio of each of the remaining nationalities to their sum total in the gross immigrant table, as follows: England (39 per cent), 6,£46,658; Scotland, Ulster and Wales (12 per cent), 2,045,125; South of Ireland (43 per cent), 7,328,366; and France (6 per cent), 1,022,563.

Then we may subtract the figure for each of these nationalities in the modern period (see foregoing table: England, 2,666,461; Scotland, Wales and Ulster, 1,577,580; Southern Ireland, 4,384,334; France, 410,239) from the above respective totals for combined early and modern periods, with the following results, representing the figures for the early period alone: England, 3,980,197; Scotland, Ulster and Wales, 467,545; Southern Ireland, 2,944,032; France, 612,324.

It is significant in glancing over the preceding paragraph that the total of England for the modern period is rather small as compared to the total net immigrant stock, whereas there is less relative diversity in the respective figures for Scotland, Ulster and Wales. This is partly explained by the fact that the English immigrants arrived in greater numbers in the earlier years when the country's rate of increase was far greater than in the later years. It is true that in the decade 1910 to 1920 emigrants from the United States to England were one-fifth the number of immigrants from England to America, while in the case of Scotland and Wales the proportion of emigrants to immigrants was only one-sixth. But there is no proof of such a phenomenon during the early period. For the ratio of Scotch-Irish emigrants to immigrants, moreover, we are wholly at a loss. But even if we were to assume that emigration to England were proportionately greater in the slight degree just remarked, the difference in the figures would be more or less negligible. Incidentally, we have assumed that all persons from Ulster were of Scotch-Irish descent, whereas a considerable number of them must have been of English or Anglo-Irish origin. In any event there is little reason to differentiate too nicely people of Anglo-Saxon heritage.

Finally, summing up all the figures for the early period, we arrive at the approximate result found in the table on the following page.

	Estimated Numbers 1920	
Ancestral Stock		
English	†4,410,197	
Scotch, Scotch-Irish, Welsh	†‡602,545	
Irish (South)	†3,079,032	
Germans, Swiss, Austrians, Mennonites, Als- tians (including some from Canada)	1,130,587	[1,303,479 less 2,000 Scan- dinavians and 375,000 Jews, plus 204,108 Alsa- tians*†c]
French, Walloons	408,926	[612,324 plus French Swiss, less Alsatians*□]
Jews (German, Swiss, Russian, Austrian)	c375,000	
Scandinavians (including some from Canada)	35,376	[33,376 plus descendants of immigrants from Russia in early period.†]
Dutch, Flemish	31,292	[32,002 less Walloons□]
Italians (North)	20,000	
Mexicans (White)	‡d12,000	

Total..... 10,104,955

† Including totals for British North America. In the early period (1790-1850), and even up to 1880, practically no French Canadians settled permanently in the United States, so that the latter formed a negligible element for the early period in the American community.

‡ The great majority of these were probably Scotch-Irish, since the immigrants from Scotland and Wales were comparatively few before 1850. (See gross immigration table.)

\* The figures for the French immigration to the United States decreased almost one-half after 1870, the year in which Alsace-Lorraine was annexed by Germany, proving that a considerable part of the so-called French immigration of the early years after 1820 was in reality German-speaking and of German nomenclature, that is Alsatian German. On the other hand, although the French Swiss were about two-sevenths as numerous as the German Swiss in the population of Switzerland, the former probably did not exceed the proportion of one-sixth of the total number of immigrants, with the Germans making up practically all the remainder; with the number of Italian Swiss being negligible. But the French Swiss would nowhere near offset the number of people of German tongue from Alsace-Lorraine. Indeed, it seems reasonable to assume that at least one-third (204,108) of the total of French should be converted to the German total, leaving 408,216 French.

† Some 2,000 descendants of Scandinavian immigrants from Russia in the early period (an arbitrary estimate) might be taken from the German and added to the Scandinavian total.

c It must be admitted that some of these German Jews might be included more properly among the number of Jews of the modern period reporting German rather than Jewish or Yiddish mother tongue. It is impossible, however, to arrive at concise figures in regard to this point. (See footnote \* of table in Note 101.)

□ The Belgian element is 7.4 per cent. (see footnote, gross immigration table) of the total of the Low Countries, or 2,368. And Böckh's table shows that the Flemish element was about 70 per cent. of the immigration from Belgium. Thus we may judge that the immigrant stock from Flanders for the early period was 1,658, while the Walloons (French-speaking) numbered but 710. The Dutch total (29,634) added to the Flemish total gives us 31,292, approximately.

d See Note 55.

Admittedly there may be other methods of arriving at figures equivalent to those I have computed by the foregoing somewhat circumvent method. For instance, Dr. Edward Jarvis (*Atlantic Monthly*, April, 1872) reaches his conclusions as to our elements of population at a given period by taking into account the two figures of the number of immigrants landing here each decade and the total population of the United States at each census respectively.

For still another interesting estimate of population in the United States the reader is referred to the article by Louis R. Sullivan in the *American Museum Journal*, October, 1918.

There never can be two estimates exactly alike for the number of survivors and descendants of immigrants of the early period before 1870 or 1880 because of the lack of positive data. Yet any conscientious and unbiased estimate would achieve about the same general results as the above. The writer believes he has given, as correctly as it is humanly possible, the general proportion of the respective ancestral elements in the "old immigrant stock of the early period"; and even if there be minor discrepancies, particularly those such as can never be known, at least the estimate is quite correct enough in a general way for the purposes of this survey. (As a matter of fact, even official Census figures cannot be regarded as being any more accurate than is possible under the system in vogue; witness complaints evoked from certain "slighted" communities. Undoubtedly some persons escape the Census enumerators.)

88. "What Are Americans?" William S. Rossiter, *Atlantic Monthly*, August, 1920.

89. Edward Alsworth Ross, "South of Panama," p. 109.

90. The white population of Alaska decreased from 36,400 in 1910 to 27,833 in 1920, probably due to the call of the World War on Alaskan manhood. Other races in 1920 were: Indians, 26,421; Negroes, 128; Chinese, 56; Japanese, 312; and Filipinos, Hawaiians and Koreans, 99.

91. It was over three years and a half after the actual taking of the 1910 Census (taken as of April 15, 1910) that the figures were published as to the foreign stock enumeration, and it is quite possible that like data for the 1920 Census will not be available until the year 1923. As a matter of fact, the Census of Foreign Stocks for 1920 would not constitute the increase in numbers of the foreign stock enumerated in 1910, for it would not include the third generation, who would have become listed as "native white, of native parents." Moreover, the increase in the foreign-born from year to year does not necessarily represent the number of immigrants. The foreign-born are constantly drawn upon by death and return migration, and must first make up this loss before registering a gain.

The next page shows a method of arriving at the increased figure in 1920 over and above that given by the Census of Foreign Stocks (two generations) in 1910:

Net Increase, Decade 1910-1920**									
Race or people	Foreign stock census of 1910 (including foreign born, foreign parentage and "mixed" foreign and foreign-native parentage, according to nationality of male parent. [See Appendix I, Table I.]	Natur increase (11.44 p. c.) [See Note 38.]	Net Immigration			Net Potential Increase of Immigrants for the Decade			Total 1920 (by adding net increases to 1910 figure)
			Immigration for the decade. (See Appendix I, Table III-A)	Emigration for the decade. (See Appendix I, Table III-B)	Net Immigration	Approximate natural increase of immigrants arrived during the decade, according to descending percentage scale. (See Appendix I, Table III-A)	Approximate potential natural increase (loss to U. S.) of emigrants departed during the decade, according to descending percentage scale. (See Appendix I, Table III-B)	Net potential increase of immigrants admitted during the decade	
English, Cornish . . . . .	3,369,109†	385,426	400,574	97,268	303,306	22,066	4,605	17,461	4,075,302
Scotch, Ulster Scotch, Welsh	1,137,616†	130,143	172,688	30,541	142,147	9,636	1,597	8,039	1,929,663* (1,417,945 plus 511,718 Scotch-Irish)
Irish (Celtic) . . . . .	4,398,498†	503,188	234,530	31,838	202,692	14,424	1,621	12,803	4,605,463* (5,117,181 less 511,718 Scotch-Irish)
German, Swiss, Austrian . .	8,275,081	946,669	355,456	63,489	291,967	24,938	4,600	20,338	9,166,055† (9,534,055 less 368,000 Jews)
Scandinavian, Icelandic . . .	2,768,552	316,722	250,397	63,314	187,083	15,396	3,399	11,997	3,284,354
Dutch, Frisian, Flemish . . .	348,525	39,871	82,611	14,659	67,952	4,977	753	4,224	460,572
French, French Canadian†	1,248,295	142,805	169,479	41,685	127,794	8,468	1,809	6,659	1,525,553
	21,545,676	2,464,824	1,665,735	342,794	1,322,941	99,905	18,384	81,521	25,046,962 (25,414,962 less Jews)



\* The Ulster Scots (Scotch-Irish) may roughly be estimated at about 10 per cent. of the actual Irish total. William S. Rossiter, a former high official of the Census Bureau, says of this (in his article, "What Are Americans?" *Atlantic Monthly*, August, 1920):

"This (the Irish) total includes the so-called Orange group, or North of Ireland Scotch Irish. . . identified by race sympathy and religious beliefs with natives of Great Britain. The proportion formed by this group . . . is not known. Approximately one-quarter of the present population of Ireland is Protestant. Hence, if only ten per cent of the persons classified as belonging to the Irish element in the United States should be regarded as Scotch or North of Ireland (Ulster) ancestry, and classified . . . with the British element, as these people insistently demand, rather than with the Irish, the latter would be reduced (ten per cent.) . . . and the former increased correspondingly."

The Immigration Bureau, as well as the Census Bureau should, by the way, begin immediately a separate classification of Irish and Ulster-men (which would find precedent in the case of North and South Italians, Flemings and Walloons, English and French-Canadians, etc.) if merely for the edification of future statesmen, statisticians, anthropologists, biologists and historians. For undoubtedly the Irish and Ulster-men diverge politically, religiously and socially, if they are not somewhat distinct temperamentally and even racially.

† See footnote \* of table in Note 101.

\*\* Most of the immigration for the decade 1910 to 1920, occurred previous to the outbreak of the World War in 1914. Hence, instead of a somewhat more than 5 per cent increase of the net immigration, as might have occurred in the case of a uniform immigration and emigration for the decade, it becomes necessary to compute the net immigrant increase for each varying element (Appendix I, Table III, and Note 38). In other words, each immigrant element must have had to offset the emigrant element plus the latter's latent, or potential, increase, before it registered its own increase for the decade. Thus the difference between the figure for the immigrant element for the decade with its increase, and the figure for the emigrant element of the decade with its potential increase, represents the net gain for the immigrant element during the decade; the same rule applying to each nationality in the immigration.

‡ The Census Report for 1910 (Chapter IX) says:

"In the case of these people (English, Irish, Scotch and Welsh) country of origin statistics come much nearer showing ethnic composition than do mother tongue statistics. As a matter of fact, a certain number of persons were returned by the enumerators as Irish, Scotch or Welsh in mother tongue, but it was evident in very many cases that such returns indicated nationality rather than mother tongue. The returns, therefore, if published, would greatly exaggerate the number of cases in which these languages are used in customary speech and at the same time would come far short of indicating the total number of persons of Irish, Scotch or Welsh extraction."

Thus we find that the census figures for the foreign stock originating from the British Isles is as follows (see Appendix I, Table II): for England, 2,206,625; Scotland and Wales, 905,829; and Ireland, 4,248,555. From this we know that the total element in the Census of 1910 for the United Kingdom is 7,361,009. But the Census tabulates the English and Celtic in 1910 according to mother tongue, as 8,905,223 (see Appendix I, Table I). It is obvious, therefore, that the difference of 1,544,214 between the total English and Celtic element and the element from the British Isles represents the element from English Canada and other British colonial possessions.

Unfortunately it is impossible to estimate with any degree of accuracy the proportion of English, Scotch, Welsh or Irish element among our immigrant stock from the British Colonies. However, it is fairly reasonable to assume that the proportions of these nationalities is in direct ratio to the general approximation for those nationalities in the population of the United Kingdom (see Appendix I, Table VII) as represented in the general time of emigration (as in the year 1901, say). It has already been remarked (see Note 71) that it was in general the immigrant element in Canada rather than the old settled population that entered the United Kingdom after 1850 (as well as before), and that the English element was overwhelmingly predominant among the immigrants into Canada after 1850. Thus, on the basis of the divisions of population in the British Isles (in 1901) we may assume that the English represent 75.28 per cent of the number of persons of British-Colonial birth or parentage; the Scotch and Welsh together, 15.01 per cent; and the Irish 9.71 per cent. (See Note 54. The English have been vastly preponderant in the later immigration into Canada. Furthermore it is the immigrants from the British Isles and their progeny, rather than the older, more settled population, that have left Canada for the United States. White immigrants from the British West Indies and other British Colonies must be generally English in origin.)

Then, dividing the total Colonial British and Irish stock of alien birth or parentage in the United States (1,544,214) into its component parts according to the above ratios, we are led to surmise that the English colonial element in our foreign stock numbered approximately 1,162,484 in 1910; the Scotch and Welsh were about 231,787; and the Irish amounted to perhaps 149,943, or thereabouts. Adding these totals to the respective totals of the foreign element from the British Isles, we come to the conclusion, somewhat arbitrarily it is true, that the number of English origin in the "English and Celtic" figure amount to approximately 3,369,109; that the Scotch and Welsh together total in the neighborhood of 1,137,616; and that the Irish possibly number as many as 4,398,498.

§ While the dark type of French originating from Southern and Central France are more prevalent in the modern than in the early French immigration, it is convenient to include them with the element from Northwest Europe. These less desirable French types are more than offset by certain Northwest European types from Italian Lombardy, the Baltic region and Poland, which we are compelled



92. In 1910 about 80 per cent of the Austro-Hungarians, 85 per cent of the Russians (Hebrews) and 83 per cent of the Italians were concentrated in the Middle Atlantic, East North Central or New England States.

93. See "Italian Emigration of Our Times," Robert F. Foster, 1919.

94. "It is not the number of children born that count, but the quality; not the number of children brought into the world, but the number that survive the perils of infancy and early manhood."—Low, "The American People."

95. "Immigration," Prescott F. Hall, 1908.

" . . . . The immigrants' children are more constrained to race suicide than the older American stock."—John R. Commons, "Races and Immigrants in America."

96. See Report of the Industrial Commission, Vol. XV, p. 476.

97. "In modern times the causes that contribute to the rapid destruction of the city population are much more potent than in the past. . . . Race suicide is practised especially in the cities, while it is almost unknown among the country population. . . . The struggle for existence is much severer in the cities, marriages are fewer, the mortality of children is greater. Prostitution, the curse of large cities . . . is an enemy to marriage and tends to shorten and destroy life. . . . Another cause lies in the very mixture of so many races. There is a biological law that hybrids do not tend to reproduce their kind.

"It is evident that the lower classes, living under less favorable conditions than the well-to-do, are more subject to rapid extinction. . . .

"The Jews . . . are a very healthy race. . . . They have been city dwellers since they left Palestine. . . . But . . . the vitality of the Jew will be greatly affected by modern city life as we find it in the City of New York. . . . Tuberculosis . . . used to be rare among the Jews, but the unsanitary life in the 'sweatshops' of New York is also increasing its victims among this people."—A. Allemann, "Immigration and the Future American Race," *Popular Science Monthly*, December, 1909.

In Idaho, an essentially rural State, more than one-third of the people are babies or children under 15 years, according to the 1920 Census.

98. It may also be pointed out, in passing, that while in any consideration of immigration we are generally concerned only with the immigrant classes, who ostensibly come to make a home in this country, rather than with the so-called non-immigrant or transient element, it is yet a queer commentary on immigration figures that so many Southern and Eastern European immigrants are constantly returning to the lands of their birth, whereas, on the other hand, of the "non-immigrant" aliens, including English

and other Northwest Europeans, many have acquired a love for the United States, through an extended stay and a free welcome into the social activities of the community, so that they eventually decide to remain in the New World.

99. According to a computation of the Census Bureau in 1850 (see Report of the Superintendent of the Seventh Census), the survivors of immigrants over a sixty-year period is practically identical with the Census enumeration of the foreign-born at the end of that period. In other words, the foreign-born enumeration in 1910 includes immigrants of the period 1850-1910 and their children. Furthermore, only immigrants who came into the United States before 1870, or thereabouts, could have had grandchildren (included in the Census enumeration as "native of native parentage") in the year 1910.

100. It was not until December 3, 1913, that the 1910 Report of Foreign Stocks was given out.

101. See the accompanying Table on Pages 287 and 288.

102. While it is admitted that an exact tabulation of the proportionate numbers of each ancestral element in the United States is utterly impossible, nevertheless the estimate given here would not differ materially from the thoughtful and conscientious estimates of statisticians in general.

103. "The spirit of nationality is one of the great dynamics of modern times . . . . Nationalism is a state of mind. Nationalism is a *belief*, held by a fairly large number of individuals, that they constitute a 'Nationality.' . . . .

"The late war was a liberal education regarding nationalistic phenomena . . . .

" . . . Nationality is a psychological concept or state of mind. Race is a physiological fact, which may be accurately determined by scientific tests . . . . In other words, race is what people anthropologically really are; nationality is what people politically think they are.

"Right here we encounter a most curious paradox. There can be no question that, as between race and nationality, race is the more fundamental, and, in the long run, the more important. A man's innate capacity is obviously dependent upon his heredity, and no matter how stimulating may be his environment, the potential limits of his reaction to that environment are fixed at his birth. Nevertheless, the fact remains that men pay scant attention to race, while nationalism stirs them to their very souls. The main reason for this seems to be because it is only about half a century since even savants realized the true nature and importance of race. Even after an idea is scientifically established, it takes a long time for it to be genuinely accepted by the public, and only after it has been thus accepted will it form the basis of practical conduct. Meanwhile the far older idea of nationality has permeated the popular consciousness, . . . In fine, our political

Race or People	Immigration			Net Potential Increase of Immigrants for the Decade			Total 1920 (by adding net increases to 1910 figure)
	Natural Increase (11.44 per cent.) (See note 38)	Immigration for the decade. (See Appendix I, Table III-A)	Emigration for the decade. (See Appendix I, Table III-B)	Net Immigration	Approximate natural increase of immigrants during the decade, according to descending percentage scale. (See Appendix I, Table III-A.)	Approximate potential natural increase of immigrants during the decade, according to descending percentage scale. (See Appendix I, Table III-B.)	
Latin (except French) and Greek: Italian (incl. Romansh, Friulian) Spanish, Spanish American, Basque Mexican, White only, see Note 35) Portuguese Rumanian Greek	2,144,002 2,162,981 272,684 139,438 150,983 129,898	1,142,063 143,703 322,718 76,568 57,191 234,200	671,418 63,720 46,566 22,172 31,933 117,402	470,645 79,983 16,152 54,396 22,258 116,807	77,464 6,977 6,966 4,181 3,932 14,767	36,949 2,771 1,122 833 1,479 6,089	2,900,436 184,375 187,093 231,131 490,711 270,243
Total	2,603,986	1,676,452	913,211	763,241	108,287	48,243	3,716,894
Slav, Finno-Ugric, Letto-Lithuanian, Albanian:							
Pollsh	193,371	498,243	144,285	353,958	36,122	10,459	2,178,295*
Czecho-Slovak	91,450	150,129	62,948	87,181	11,356	4,448	984,925
Russian, Ukrainian, Ruthenian	14,858	276,826	97,682	179,144	19,205	6,041	732,043*
Jugoslav, Bulgar, other Slav (Wend)	366,411	210,032	120,564	89,468	15,195	7,177	505,814
Albanian	2,366						2,637
Magyar	319,261	129,391	68,901	60,490	9,282	5,118	840,543*
Finnish, Estonian, Lappish	198,852	22,749	20,151	43,504	1,266	2,745	267,850
Lithuanian, Lett.	210,694	86,112	16,840	69,272	6,308	1,200	309,177
Total	3,717,149	1,414,388	531,371	883,017	101,479	35,709	4,978,178
Semite and Armenian:							
Jewish	1,670,436	497,546	31,771	465,775	34,273	2,273	1,628,571,24*
Syrian, Arab	46,603	34,752	6,659	28,093	2,395	367	32,055
Armenian	29,991	30,733	6,411	24,322	2,057	358	59,443
Total	1,747,030	563,031	44,841	518,190	38,725	2,998	1,129,998,622
Grand Total	8,068,165	3,653,871	1,489,423	2,164,448	248,491	86,950	11,693,694

\* See table in Note 91 (notation †). Note 55, and footnote § of first table in Note 87. The London statistician, David Trietsch, estimated that the number of Jews in the United States early in 1920 was 3,100,000. On the other hand, the American Jewish Year Book gives us the results of the survey of the Bureau of Jewish Statistics and Research of the American Jewish Committee under the direction of Dr. Oppenheim, with the cognizance of the Census Bureau, wherein it is estimated that there may have been as many as 3,390,572 Jews in the United States in 1918. It is admitted by Dr. Oppenheim, however, that this figure appears to be somewhat exaggerated, and that 3,320,000 is a more accurate figure. Even the latter is out of proportion to that of the general population; and even if the rate of increase of the year would have grown to but 2,761,420 in 1920 with a rate of increase comparable to that of the general population; and if the rate of increase of the year would have been prodigious, it seems hardly possible that the Trietsch and Oppenheim estimates, and can be accepted as a reasonable approximation of the Jewish world element in the United States in 1920. Admittedly the estimate of the Census Bureau is too small, for it includes only two generations, without giving the contribution of the early immigration; while the 1910 Census Report itself declares (Chapter IX, Vol. I) that Yiddish "is the mother tongue reported for only part of the Hebrews, the others being returned as speaking Polish, Russian, German, etc." Certainly the Census figure of 15,510 (in 1910) for the number of Yiddish and Hebrew speaking people whose country of origin is Germany is ridiculously small and obviously of little value. We have already determined that there were about 17,876 Jews represented among the descendants of the Colonial stock, in the year 1920; and that a large majority of the 230,000 Jews estimated by Hackenberg for the year 1880 would probably have increased to 375,000 in 1920. Adding these two figures, 17,876 and 375,000 to the 2,359,309 total for the modern immigrant stock derived from the Census and immigration statistics, we have a sum of 2,752,185. Then, subtracting the latter figure from the mean estimate derived from the computations of Trietsch and Oppenheim (3,250,000), we arrive at a difference of 497,815, representing, broadly speaking, those German, Polish, Hungarian, Rumanian and other Jews who did not report Yiddish or Hebrew as their mother tongue. We can do no more than divide the latter figure proportionately according to the strength in the mother tongue census of those nationalities among whom the Jewish element is known to have been most numerous. Of course we might take into consideration the fact that one man out of seven in the population of Poland is a Jew, while, for instance, only about one in forty in the population of Germany is Jewish, and also we might consider that the proportion of Jews in the immigration from Russia, Poland, Hungary and Rumania has been far greater comparatively than the proportion among German immigrants. On the other hand, however, the German Jews display less distinctive qualities than the provincial Jews from the ghetto, and moreover they are proud of their German citizenship in greater measure than are the persecuted ghetto Jews of their Russian or Polish nationality. Hence our arbitrary proportional method appears to be reasonable enough on the whole; as a result of which computation we find the Jews reporting mother tongue (German) to be 368,000 (74 per cent), the Polish, 85,000 (17 per cent), the Russian, 13,000 (2.5 per cent), the Hungarian, 15,000 (3 per cent), the Lithuanian, 13,000 (2.5 per cent) and the Rumanian rounding out the total with 3,815 (less than 1 per cent). Of course there would also be a scattering of Dutch, Bohemian, Oriental, British, Portuguese, French, Spanish, Italian and other Jews, whose numbers are obviously too negligible to be included under this category. Still others might be included in the Census figure for "unknown." Incidentally, the Polish National League Census found 3,063,000 "Polish-speaking" persons in 1910, a large proportion of whom must very obviously have been Jews.

† Difference between Spanish element according to mother tongue (see Appendix I, Table I) and the Mexican element according to country of origin (see Appendix I, Table II, and Note 55).

‡ Estimated one-fifth of total Mexican (see Appendix I, Table II and Note 55) represents white Mexican element.

\*\* See footnote \*\* of table in Note 91.

1 426,403 less 363,422 Mexicans. 2 One-fifth total Mexican, 363,422. 3 White estimated one-eighth total. 4 84,526 less Jews. 5 3,720,709 less Jews 6 2,263,295 less Jews. 7 337,042 less Jews. 8 420,438 less Jews. 9 5,091,178 less Jews. 10 2,359,309 plus unspecified Jews 11 2,500,807 plus Jews 12 11,325,694 plus unspecified German Jews.



life is still dominated by nationalism rather than race, and practical politics are thus conditioned, not by what men really are, but by what they think they are.

" . . . . Ethnologists have proved conclusively that, apart from certain palaeolithic survivals and a few historically recent Asiatic intruders, Europe is inhabited by only three stocks: (1) the blond, long-headed 'Nordic' race, (2) the medium-complexioned, round-headed 'Alpine' race, (3) the brunet, long-headed 'Mediterranean' race. . . . .

"Now all this was known to most well-educated Europeans long before 1914. And yet it did not make the slightest difference. The reason is that, in spite of everything, the vast majority of Europeans still believe that they fit into an entirely different race category. . . . . For his blood race he will not stir; for his thought-race he will die. . . . ."—Lothrop Stoddard, "The New World of Islam," 1921.

104. "It was stated by Dr. Folkmar and his associates that some of the Greeks, rubbing up against other races to the North and East of them, had changed somewhat from the 'long' to the 'broad' head. . . . . When it was stated that some Greeks were more inclined to broad-headedness, it stirred them up, and the Greek legation took up the question and protested against such a base calumny concerning the people of Greece. But scientific fact cannot be changed by diplomatic representation."—F. J. Haskins, "The Immigrant—An Asset and A Liability."

105. Ten years ago the Eugenics Record office at Cold Spring Harbor, L. I., was organized by Dr. Charles B. Davenport, today director of the Department of Experimental Evolution of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, sharing with Sir Francis Galton of London the honor of being the foremost student of heredity in the world. During the decade the characters and histories of about fifty thousand individuals have passed into formulas of heredity.

106. It is difficult to isolate the obscure Alpine type, because of considerable intermixture with Nordic, Mediterranean and Tartar peoples. In the masses of the Slavs the Alpine strain has a decided tendency toward the Tartar or Mediterranean types, while in the aristocracy the Alpine racial character tends to approach the Nordic type. Certainly the Alpines must be looked upon as a mongrel people. To all intents the Alpines of Central France must be regarded as exponents of Nordic or Iberian civilization and political thought. Also the Poles, White Russians and other Slavs display certain Nordic features. In the main, however, the Alpine type is predominant among the Slavs as a whole. The mental capacities of this race appear to be inferior to those of the Nordics and Mediterraneans. Observe that it was the stronghold of the Nordics in Northwest Russia and the sparsely distributed gentry of the Empire that produced the most brilliant individual characters in Russian history. In fact it was



the Nordic (Scandinavian) Varangians who actually established the Russian Empire.

107. The Assyroid type is identified not alone by the distinctive form of the nose but also by a peculiar eye-fold that is most pronounced in the Jews. The Assyroid type is found among the Arabs, Armenians and other Iranians, and even the Turks, as well as among the Jews. In the case of the Ashkenazim Jews, the Armenians, the Arabs of the valleys north of Arabia and of the sea coast and the Syrians (who are but the descendants of commingled Jews, Arabs and Phoenicians), this strain appears to be predominant.

On the other hand, the Sephardim Jews of northwest Germany, Holland, Italy and the British Isles, as well as the Spanish or Oriental Jews, do not appear to be of so pronounced Assyroid type. These Sephardim Jews, who, although they number only one-tenth of the Jewish population of the world, have always been looked upon as the aristocracy of the Jewish people, are at least in part of that subspecies of the Mediterranean race which is found in Arabia and vicinity. This type is found in its purest form among the Ariba Arabs, the Arabs of Hadramaut and Yemen (Himyarites or Sabeans), the Joktanides of southern Arabia, and those Bedouins not affected by Negroid admixture. Even the Ishmaelites (who claim descent from the son of Abraham), when they spread into Northern Africa, were not so differentiated from their Berber kinsmen, in spite of their Assyroid strain, as to prevent amalgamation of the two folk.

This brings us to the question of whether the original Jewish, or Semitic, type was Assyroid (probably Asiatic) or Mediterranean (African). This is a highly problematical query. From all indications we are merely able to suggest that the Semitic-Hamitic languages were produced by the mixture of tribes of both these great races of antiquity.

It is interesting to observe that in the case of the Ashkenazim Jews and the Armenians the skull is round or brachycephalic. In the case of the latter and some of the Ottoman Turks there is a rather distinct "sugar loaf" headform that is described by Deniker as hypsi-brachycephaly, probably as the result of practicing deformation of the skull. Indications point to the migrations of the Ashkenazim Jews through Armenia and the Caucasus into Eastern Europe. At least it is significant that many of the historic houses of the nobility in the Caucasus at the present day are avowedly of Jewish origin and even trace their descent from King David. It is a matter of history that, when the Babylonians and Assyrians entered Palestine six centuries before Christ, they were accustomed to banish people of conquered countries, and thus thousands of Israelites were forced into the Caucasus, then also a part of the Assyrian Empire. Today the 100,000 descendants of these Jewish refugees are known as the Jewish Highlanders because of their warlike propensities, which are a legacy of the pure Jewish strain untouched by mongrel admixture.

On their journey the Ashkenazim Jews undoubtedly received further Assyroid blood from the Armenians. Then again during the Khazar Empire in southern Russia and during the early period of Hungarian history, proselytizing among these yellow Gentiles was common, and as a result the Ashkenazim Jew is at least in part descended from the Tartars and the Huns. It is a sad commentary, in view of the old Talmudic law of the Jews which recognized the physical qualities of eugenics or selection, that these ancient laws that sought to maintain the purity of their race were misrepresented. The West Turkish nomads, the Khazars, after a temporary conversion to Christianity, partly adopted Judaism. Already modified by contact with heterogeneous folk in the Caucasus and the Balkans, the Jews, after the conversion of the Khazars, did not frown upon intermarriage between Jew and Tartar. The blindness of this policy must have become apparent in the later years, and an increasing orthodoxy partly saved the intellectual capacity of the Jewish people; but the Eastern European Jews are to this day a far less intellectual folk than the Sephardim Jews because of this injury to their racial purity in past centuries. In contemplation of this fact lies a lesson for the American people.

Whether in future centuries the Polish and Russian Jews, or at least the orthodox members among them, can by the admitted potentiality of their Jewish blood breed out the alien strains, is a question open to grave doubt. Incidentally, the Jews must have absorbed a certain amount of Alpine and Nordic blood during their long sojourn in Europe. Else how are we to account for the presence of occasional blond Jews, particularly among the Sephardim element? Moreover, red-haired Jews are quite common among the Ashkenazim Jews, which may perhaps partly be explained by the inevitable infusion of Slavic blood, although there is reason to believe that there was a certain proportion of red-headed persons among the Jews even in ancient days.

All of the foregoing leads inevitably to one conclusion: that the Jews are a far more mixed population than they are supposed to be. This view is strengthened when we consider how the Abyssinians, Falachas, Tamulls or "black Jews," the Tauridians and the Chaldeans of the Caucasus, have all been influenced by contact with the migrating Jews. It is an amazing and undeniable fact, however, that in the union of the Jew with either Nordic, Alpine or Mediterranean, the progeny almost invariably reverts to the Jewish type, and it is because of this fact that the Jews have retained their characteristics through the centuries.

108. It is not to be assumed that the Finns, Great Russians, French Canadians, not to mention the Eskimos, Paleasiatics or Patagonians, will ever burst into great splendor merely because of the stimulus of ambition derived from a cold climate. The potential ability of a people is to be measured by its adaptability to the climate which best suits its inherent temperament. Thus the Iberian race reached its most famous heights in warm climes, but in general failed in the temperate zone; whilst the Nordic

race has generally been bred out in lands beneath a hot sun, except where it has exploited a race more adapted to tropical heat. The racial factor, powerful as it may be, can become latent and even impotent when the individual steps out of his habitat.

109. While the results of anthropological inquiry, as far as the population of the United States is concerned, has been very limited heretofore, yet there is a rapidly increasing amount of research that is bound to bring important results in time. Thus, for example, in his investigation concerning the inheritance of stature, Dr. C. B. Davenport chose Lexington, Kentucky and Scotland County, North Carolina, as sections which had welcomed many Scots, and he attributed the many tall individuals to the fact of their Scottish heritage. (In the *Geographical Review*.)

According to statistics compiled by the Federal Children's Bureau, the children of California surpass the children of other parts of the nation in both height and weight. The Bureau does not attempt to explain why this should be so, however.

Certain it is that in the Civil War native-born New Englanders enlisting out West were taller than those who joined "down East," the explanation probably lying in the fact that frontier conditions produce large types of mankind.

In "Washington County Giants," a survey published by the Indiana Historical Society, an attempt is made to prove that the men of that region of Indiana are much taller than the average American.

Undoubtedly, too, other districts in America can boast of extraordinarily tall humans, attributable to race or other causes.

It may be mentioned here that the Field Museum of Natural History in Chicago now has a vast collection of human skeletal material (thousands of skeletons and hundreds of casts), the bulk of the Negro and white material consisting of full skeletons secured in the Middle West and macerated at the Museum.

110. Madison Grant, "The Passing of the Great Race," 1916.

111. Since 1504 the fisher-folk and sailors of Normandy, Brittany and Saintonge and the islands of the French coast had been crossing the sea to the banks of Newfoundland. Many of these were Protestants. But by 1550 La Rochelle, and its province, Saintonge, had become the Stronghold of Protestantism, while many other Huguenot towns flourished where the Roman mass had practically disappeared. After the persecutions it was a Protestant population that welcomed the colonization idea. The somewhat liberal Henry IV and Coligny protected Protestants in founding their first agricultural colony in America. In 1603 de Monts, the Huguenot, was granted Nova Scotia, taking with him 120 colonists, including both Protestants and Catholics. Later the Jesuits demoralized New France by crushing the power of the Huguenots, but the influence of the latter continued through the centuries notwithstanding.—See "French Blood in America," Fosdick, 1906.

The Huguenots formed one-tenth of the population of France until the early part of the Seventeenth Century, when emigration dwindled their numbers in France to a few hundred thousands. However, their fortitude is the inspiration of a million Protestants in France today.

112. "We must distinguish between the numerous and variegated Slavic peoples of Russia, and the half-Teuton handful that not only dominates but is the Russian Empire as we know it . . . . Russia may be said to be an Asiatic monster with a half-European head."—Seth K. Humphrey, "Mankind," 1917.

113. The casual observer of Jewish types in New York City and vicinity must, if his attention be called to it, be impressed by the very evident difference between the true Jewish type of the well-to-do Jews and that of the Jews of the ghetto. This radical difference is undoubtedly one of race. At least we know that the Polish and Russian Jews, from an anthropological standpoint, are in great part descended from Judaized, or converted, people of Mongolian blood who entered Eastern Europe at various periods of recorded history.

114. It is interesting to observe that of this element of "unknown" mother tongue (for 1910) about 109,000 came from Germany, 59,000 from Austria (as it existed previous to the World War), 52,000 from Russia (including Poland), 21,000 from Canada and 18,000 from Hungary, with 9,000 born at sea and a scattering from Belgium, Switzerland, West Indies, Turkey, Atlantic and Pacific Islands and others "not specified" or of "mixed foreign parentage." There is nothing in these figures that would lead us to suppose that the Nordic element does not make up the largest part of the unknown element, with the remainder divided for the most part between the Mediterraneans, Alpines and Assyroids; or, in other words, it would seem that the proportion of the great race strains in our population is affected very little, if at all, by the presence of this "unknown" element. Probably each element was reduced proportionately by the departure of some 119,000 unspecified emigrants in the decade. The total for "unknown" in the text includes also the net immigration and net potential increase of that immigration of "other peoples." (See Appendix I, Tables I and III). The natural increase over the 1910 total is about 11.44 per cent.

115. At the 250th anniversary of the town of Fredericksburg, Va., in 1921, there participated members of the Rappahannock tribe of Indians, actual descendants of the Redmen with whom Captain John Smith concluded a treaty for the settlement of the whites.

116. In 1711 the Tuscaroras were defeated by the Virginians and Carolinians in retaliation for a massacre of settlers. The remnant of the tribe joined the Iroquois Confederacy in New York.

117. Mexico is now an Indian nation. The Mestizos (Indian tending away from white) are now the body of the population, with the pure Aztec Indians next. The creoles (white) and "tente en l'aire" (the latter of Indian blood in a small degree, but tending toward white) are third, but rapidly decreasing through emigration and admixture. Lastly are the less numerous mulattos (Negro and white) and the Zambos (Negro and Indian) who are regarded as especially vicious. Our Mexican farmhands have come almost entirely from the sixty per cent of the population of Old Mexico, which is practically pure Indian, descended from the Aztecs, Toltecs, Mayas and other ancient peoples. Pride of race is strong within them.

118. It is known that several Negroes entered the Southwest and California with the Spanish expeditions into those regions. One giant Negro scout incurred the hatred of the Indians by his indiscretions and thus brought on a revolt.

119. See "A Short History of the American Negro," Brawley, 1913.

120. There is some doubt whether the small number of taxed Indians were counted with white or colored prior to 1860.

121. About half the Negro people live in an impoverished condition, with a death rate from fifty to one hundred per cent higher than that of the whites. Even in New Orleans, where climatic conditions favor the whites less than the Negroes, the last decade shows an increased mortality among the blacks. The granting of freedom allows the criminal and stupid element to indulge more indiscretions than under the institution of slavery; so that those who cannot resist vice are dying rapidly. The Negro rate of increase in the decade 1910-1920 was but six per cent (one-half that of the whites) and only half the rate of increase of the decade 1900-1910.

122. From the days of the "Pony Express" riders, among whom were some Negroes, the latter have been gradually drifting toward California in some numbers, until today there is a considerable Negro element in the Pacific coast State.

123. The center of Negro population which, in 1790, was near Petersburg, Va., has been almost stationary since 1880 about the boundary between Alabama and Georgia near the Southern line of Tennessee, or slightly west and south, up to the Census of 1920.

124. "Representatives of various Negro races are undoubtedly present in our collection. We have for example several who show distinctly an ancestry from the tribe which Hawkins exterminated from West Africa when he brought the entire population across the Atlantic as slaves."—T. Wingate Todd, "American Journal of Physical Anthropology," January-March, 1921.



125. "In the great struggle for existence which, in future centuries, will grow in intensity, the Negro will be eliminated. . . . This is the probable solution of the Negro problem in the United States. One of the chief means by which this process of elimination is hastened, is the marked tendency of the Negro to leave the rural districts and to settle in the large cities, where he has much less chance of survival than the more energetic and thrifty white man."—Albert Allemann, "Immigration and the Future American Race," *Popular Science Monthly*, December, 1909.

Franz Boas (in the *Yale Quarterly Review* of January, 1921) expresses the belief that the infusion of white strains into the Negro race, through the agency of white men and black women, should be instrumental in gradually eliminating the blacks. But does this solution take into account the two facts that there is not enough miscegenation to prevent the resurgence of such a primitive, and hence overpowering, type as the Negro; and, secondly, that as the mulatto approached the white type, susceptible white women might intermarry with mulatto men, so that the blood of the black would infiltrate, and thus mongrelize, the white population of America? In the words of Seth K. Humphrey ("Mankind," 1919): "The Negro-white . . . is a living protest. He is not the protest of a Negro—no Negro protests his race. It is the cry of the forceful Aryan in soul entanglement with an utterly strange being."

126. Walt Whitman, "Ethiopia Saluting the Colors."

127. It is true that when a recent article was published in the United States, broaching the subject of the colonization of American Negroes in Brazil, much unfavorable comment was awakened within the Brazilian press. This was the more surprising in view of the fact that miscegenation has always flourished in Northern Brazil particularly. The presumption is that the purely white Brazilian element of the Southern provinces, which dominates the political and social life of that republic, recognizes the attitude of Anglo-Saxons toward miscegenation and fears that Brazil may be regarded as a land of inferior half-castes. Patriotism is an increasingly strong characteristic of the white Brazilian. Hence, through national rather than racial pride, the Brazilians resent any implication of racial inferiority. Moreover, the vast number of immigrants from Southern Europe is making Southern Brazil a Latin rather than a mestizo country. Yet if American capitalists appeal to the keen business acumen of the Brazilians, while allaying their suspicions that we do not recognize the body of the nation as a superior white folk, there is reason to believe that the Brazilian government would co-operate with American capital to colonize the now sparsely populated regions of the Amazon basin in which white colonization has proved a failure. Indeed the Brazilian government is now offering inducements to American capitalists to use colonists, of whatever nationality the promoters may choose, to build the railroads

along which the colonists are later to dwell. Certain parts of Brazil which must be looked upon as unfitted for white settlement boast of a potential wealth in hardwoods and minerals beyond all reckoning. The new stimulus of production would be of direct benefit to the some three million Negroes now inhabiting Northern Brazil. In the Amazon country, it is said, a man may accomplish in a few hours of early morning and evening, with less effort, as much as a farmer in temperate climes would accomplish in a whole day's work. With the proper inducements (not forgetting the vaudeville, moving pictures and other amusements which appeal to the Negro quite as much as the white man) the Afro-Americans would not hesitate to journey to a new home across the Caribbean. In a warm climate the Negroes would escape the ravages of pneumonia and tuberculosis.

128. John L. Sewell, "The Industrial Revolution and the Negro," Scribner's, March, 1921.

129. It is not so impossible that the day may come when the "black belt" along the Gulf coast, or about the mouth of the Mississippi, may be in part or wholly given over to a Negro population. For a northward tendency on the part of the Nordics of the South has been noted as being somewhat significant. The passing of slavery forced many Southern whites into intolerable competition with the Negroes. The wealthy planters could still employ large numbers of Negro hands, but the great majority of the whites will one day be compelled to seek sustenance in more advantageous surroundings. Besides, planter and poor white are both more susceptible to malaria than is the case with the Negro. Thus we have seen in late years many Southerners moving above the Mason and Dixon line, and finding increased prosperity in an environment more adapted to their inborn Nordic temperament. Until that possible day when a machine will be invented for the rapid picking of cotton, Negro labor up to certain numbers will be utilized in the South. Whether white planters can always exploit this Negro labor in a region where the former may be a mere handful is again another question.

130. Robert T. Kerlin, "The Voice of the Negro," 1920.

131. Both the "picture brides" and the "smuggled" immigrants are incidental, but significant features of the controversy with Japan.

In the case of the former, it is a fact that women in Japan sent their pictures to Japanese men in California, and without further ado were sent for and entered the United States as wives of the latter. Practically none of the female sex are included in the outgoing tide, and, considering the laxity in morals of the Japanese from our standpoint, it is quite possible that many of these women came as brides of men who have since returned to Japan.

In the case of the latter, information was received by the Immigration Bureau in 1919 which indicated that Japanese coolies

entered Mexico, not only direct from Japan, but also via Central and South America, for the purpose of gaining illegal entry into the United States. Some Japanese ranchers and others in their employ were caught and given penitentiary sentences, while over a hundred Japanese laborers were apprehended and deported, according to the Report of the Bureau.

The chairman of the House sub-committee on immigration and naturalization announced that an "underground system" begins at Yokohama. From there it leads to Honolulu and extends across the Pacific to Guaymas, Mexico. Here, by water or across the border, Japanese coolies are smuggled into the United States, through a perfect system of escorts. Mexican guards are known to have been bribed. The smuggled Japanese hides for five years in the vineyards or agricultural districts and at the expiration of this time limit can come out, proving his length of residence by a bank deposit made at the time of his arrival in this country.

However, in December, 1921 (See N. Y. Sun, December 14, 1921) a new treaty was entered into between Mexico and China, whereby the bars are placed by Mexico against all Chinese laborers. And an agitation has been begun to place like restrictions against the influx of Japanese into Mexico.

132. The so-called "barred zone" provision in section 3 of the immigration act of February 5, 1917, excludes from the United States all natives of the vast territory included within the wording of the act, excepting certain exempted classes specified. This shuts out all coolie immigrants, such as Hindus, Indo-Chinese, Malays, Tunguses, Mongols, Turcomans, certain Arabs and various other peoples, estimated altogether at 500,000,000.

133. The intermarriage of Japanese men with white women is quietly encouraged by the Japanese government as a propaganda for their doctrine of "race equality." In a cosmopolitan city like New York, for instance, where racial pride, particularly among the lower classes of foreign women, is a negligible quantity, many of the employers and heads of departments of Japanese houses are married to white girls, many of the latter being their former employees. In their smooth, wily, but always polite manner, these Orientals ingratiate themselves with said white women. They blind these ignorant and easily flattered girls by taking them on luxurious outings, often paid for by the firm, such as these young females have never been used to in all their lives. As a result of this constant flaunting of wealth, which to the girl of this stamp means social position, marriage is consummated. This is the signal for general rejoicing on the part of the Japanese and his friends. The celebrations last for a week, and the office force, including white employees, are compelled to receive a bonus. Then comes disillusionment for the bride, for she finds herself ostracised from her race. The real sufferers, however, are the half-blood children of such a union, if there happen to be any. In Japan these half-bloods are regarded with aversion by Japanese and by whites of the foreign

colony alike, but their lot is easy compared to that of the half-caste who is brought up in the United States; for the latter is an American only in his own estimation, not in that of the majority of Americans. Some day, perhaps, these mixed-bloods will be swallowed up within the future generations in America, but it cannot be with beneficial result to the latter.

134. American Review of Reviews, Editorial, November, 1920.

135. It is charged that many of the Japanese in California have actually sought to evade the Census enumerators, and that during the 1920 tabulation a recount was necessitated in San Diego County which showed that there were fifty per cent more Japanese in the County than were first counted. The California State Board of Control claimed that there were 87,279 Japanese in California, as compared to the 70,196 given in the 1920 Census. Even the report of the investigations of the Japanese Foreign Office stated that there were some 130,000 Japanese living in the whole of continental United States in 1920. Governor Stephens of California claimed that the Japanese population of his State was between 80 and 85 per cent of the total Japanese population of continental United States.

136. On the next page is a fairly approximate estimate, according to Census figures or other sources, of the different colored elements for the year 1920.

137. Albert Ernest Jenks ("The Practical Value of Anthropology to Our Nation," *Science*, February 18, 1921, LIII, No. 1364) points out that sciences today develop in direct ratio to the practical service rendered (as in the case of agriculture and zooculture); and hence that an anthropological laboratory should be established (according to the outlined plan of the Carnegie Institution). The problem of the alien and the Negro require scientific investigations, he asserts, in order to promulgate a national policy with respect to these. Seth K. Humphrey ("Mankind," 1917) says, "Under the stimulus of a growing conviction that all is not as might be with the inherent qualities of the human race, science has gathered in the last dozen years more knowledge as to what racial values are, and the manner of their inheritance, than in all the years preceding. This knowledge is well set forth in a more or less technical literature, but it has reached the general reader mainly through the public press, and so indifferently that its practical relation to life is usually misapprehended."

138. In New York City, or other regions where the competition of ailens is most pronounced, the old stock tends to restrict its rate of increase, whereas in the South and West the old stock increases more freely. This seems to prove that not only would the quality of our population have been improved but even the quantity, had there been no immigration of peoples of low economic standards.

## Net Increase, Decade 1910-1920\*

Race or people	Colored stock census of 1910 [See Appendix I, Tables I and XII]	Net Immigration			Net Potential Increase of Immigrants for the Decade			Total 1920†
		Natural increase (11.44 p. c.) [See Note 38.]	Immigration for the decade. (See Appendix I, Table III-A)	Emigration for the decade. (See Appendix I, Table III-B)	Net Immigration	Approximate natural increase of immigrants arrived during the decade, according to descending percentage scale. (See Appendix I, Table III-A)	Approximate potential natural increase (loss to U. S.) of emigrants departed during the decade, according to descending percentage scale. (See Appendix I, Table III-B)	
Negro, Mulatto	9,827,763	.....	63,155	13,537	49,618	3,114	659	10,463,013 <sup>a</sup>
Indian	265,683	.....	159,028†	45,964†	113,064	6,763†	854†	335,000#
Mexican (peon)	.....	.....	(peons est. 1/8's total)	(peons est. 1/8's total)	.....	(peons est. 1/8's total)	(peons est. 1/8's total)	1,050,005†
Japanese	72,157	.....	80,653	15,912	64,741	3,470	778	111,025 <sup>b</sup>
Korean	462	.....	18,635	21,935	(dec.) 3,300	881	1,090	1,230
Chinese	71,531	.....	8,242	6,439	1,803	554	439	61,686
Turkish	5,417	620	1,849	1,312	537	130	65	7,955
Hindu (East Indian)	2,545	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	2,505
Siamese	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Hawaiian	N	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Samoan	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	147
Maori	8	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Malay	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Filipino	160	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	5,603
All other (Gypsy, Persian, Kurd, Georgian)	784	90	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	874
Total	10,959,859†	.....	331,562	105,099	233,063	14,912	3,885	12,039,043



\* See footnote \*\* of table n Note 91.  
 † This total "colored" must not be confused for the total of "colored" in the census of 1910, for the Mexicans, Turks and "all other" are included with the white stock in the Census.  
 ‡ See Note 55.

§ According to the Report of the Bureau of Indian Affairs there were at least 333,702 Indians in the United States on June 30, 1919. Exclusive of the Five Civilized Tribes and Indians not under an agent, there were 164,783 full-blood and 46,170 more than half-blood. On the other hand, the Census figures for 1920 record only 242,959 Indians, an actual decrease from the 265,683 Indians recorded in the 1910 Census. The Census Bureau explains this in part by the fact that persons having only slight traces of Indian blood were enumerated as Indians in 1910 and as whites in 1920. In other words, it is difficult to isolate all persons of slight Indian strain. If we are to regard all persons of slightest Indian blood as of Indian race, as we regard persons with a drop of Negro blood as of the Negro race, then we must regard the figures of the Bureau of Indian Affairs to be nearer the truth. But it must be understood that Indian blood is far more assimilable within the white population than that of the Negro. For example, a white man with no outward sign of Indian ancestry may boast of lineal descent from the Princess Pocahontas. It is a mooted question as to whether or no the Indian race is decreasing in respect to actual composition within the general population. Since there are some intermarriages between Indians and whites, the number of persons classed as Indians might increase appreciably without any increase in the total quantity of Indian blood in the country. (See XIII Census Report, p. 129.) The Report of the Indian Bureau is taken from reports of Indian school superintendents, supplemented by information derived from the 1910 Census for localities in which no Indian representatives were located. It was assumed that the Five Civilized Tribes amounted to about 99,000, including 23,400 freedmen, but not including 2,500 intermarried whites. Exclusive of the Five Civilized Tribes were about 234,000. It was estimated that there were perhaps 72,000 with less than half, but still a discernable "strain" of Indian blood. There are several thousand Yaquis from Mexico in Arizona, who often speak their native tongue rather than Spanish. Probably many of these are classed as "Mexican" in the Census tabulation.

N In 1910 the Hawaiians of pure or half blood were evidently included as "native white" citizens.  
 § The attempt is made to estimate the actual number of persons with even a slight strain of colored blood in their veins, rather than (as in our estimates of the white stocks) proportionately to the total population.

a 1920 Census figure. Total Negro increase was but 6.5 per cent.

b 1920 Census figure. If the rate of increase of the Japanese in the United States kept pace with the white population, it would seem that the Japanese would have numbered, with the net immigration, nearly 148,000 in 1920. This proves one of two things: either the Census enumerators failed to count certain Japanese, whether through the machinations of the Japanese population or not; or else the admittedly high birth rate of Japanese women is more than offset by the inferior numbers, as yet, of persons of that sex and a high death rate. According to the estimate of the California Bureau of Vital Statistics, based on the death list of Japanese, there are 109,000 of that race in California as compared to the 1920 Census figure of 71,942 for that State.

On the other hand, Charles Edward Pell ("The Law of Births and Deaths," 1921) offers the general hypothesis that "decline in the birth rate is mainly due to a natural law which adjusts the degree of fertility to suit the death rate of the race." However, this supposition must fail to include the rate of increase of the early Americans under pioneering conditions.

139. Dr. Alexander Graham Bell (Journal of Heredity, Washington, May, 1921) foretells that race suicide among the higher stocks will eventually be eliminated by the fact that hereditary repugnance of child birth will be transmitted to a declining number of children. He points out, however, that the admission of immigrants of low caliber during the critical period of declining birth rate is the great danger to America today.

140. Madison Grant, "The Passing of the Great Race," 1916.

141. "In the City of New York, and elsewhere in the United States, there is a native American aristocracy . . . and the native American, while, of course, disclaiming the distinction of a patrician class, nevertheless has, up to this time, supplied the leaders of thought and the control of capital . . . of the community."—Madison Grant, "The Passing of the Great Race."

142. H. G. Wells, "Outline of History," 1920.

143. The writer is reminded of the case of an American woman who not so long ago haled a certain Sicilian to court because he had eloped with her daughter of seventeen years. The anguish of the mother, caused by "race prejudice" if you will, was brutally assailed by a pompous judge, who no doubt prided himself upon his "Americanism." Yet the writer is compelled to wonder what would have been the feelings of that same judge, if a swarthy son of a radically remote race had, under favor of his languorous Southern nature, stirred the tender sensibilities of the judge's own daughter!

144. Seth K. Humphrey, "Mankind," 1917.

145. "The maximum population which continental United States, as now limited, will ever have, will be roughly twice the present population."—Raymond Pearl and Lowell J. Reed, "On the Rate of Growth of the Population of the United States since 1790 and its Mathematical Representation", Proc. Nat. Ac. Sc., 1920, VI, No. 6.

The older communities (in the United States) having already acquired dense population, resulting in a more severe struggle for existence, show the highest proportion of adults to children; while in the younger or more sparsely settled States, and in those in which wide opportunity for the individual exists, the proportion of children to adults is much greater. (See "Population Growth in a Century," Census Bureau, 1909.)

146. The centre of population as disclosed by the 1920 Census is located in the southeast corner of Owen County, Indiana, 8.3 miles southeast of the town of Spencer, in the vicinity of the community known as Whitehall, Indiana.

147. "The average annual excess of births over deaths during the ten years following 1890 for those born of Irish mothers was 11.2 per 1,000; for those born of native American mothers it was 16. The death rate in 1900 for those born of Irish mothers was 22.2 per 1,000, and for those born of American mothers 15.2. . . .

"The average age at death of native whites born of native American mothers was, in 1900, 36 years, and of native whites born of foreign mothers, 15 years."—Dr. Edw. F. Carroll, in the *New York Tribune*, March 30, 1903.

A Bulletin of the Department of Labor shows that more than 200,000 babies less than a year old and 17,000 mothers die every year in America from causes that are controllable; which means well over 2,000,000 lives lost in a decade. Nor does that take into account the deaths of older children, and even adults, from preventable as well as hereditary diseases. Obviously a large part of these deaths among the whites come from the foreigners and lower classes generally, with their unfavorable environment and living conditions. However, in 1919 the death rate of the country, as announced by the Census Bureau, was the lowest on record; and the Census of 1920 actually shows a big decrease in the ratio of deaths to births among infants under one year, the death rate of such infants being now only about 800 in 10,000. This is undoubtedly the result of enforced social hygiene throughout the United States.

148. Edwin Grant Conklin, "Some Biological Aspects of Immigration," Scribner's, 1921.

149. A Report of the Rockefeller Foundation in July, 1921, states that from 1885 to 1919 the death rate among infants in New York City under one year of age dropped from 273.6 to 81.6 per thousand births. Statistics gathered for the year 1915 showed that among infants of American parentage the death rate was 106.3 per thousand, whereas among those of Italian parentage it was 103.2, of Austro-Hungarian parentage 79.8 and of Russian-Polish parentage only 77.9 per thousand.

150. "Do not exceptional individuals arise now and then from these apparently hopeless sources? They do. But they arise so infrequently that they prove only the general barrenness of their hereditary values. We should hold to a view of proportion in our estimates of these people. One Mary Antin does not compensate for the tens of thousands of Russian Jews who never get beyond a driving acuteness in small trade, and range down from that to gunmen for wages and incendiaries for insurance."—Seth K. Humphrey, "Mankind," 1917.

151. Louis Thomas in "L'Opinion," Paris. Translated in the New York Globe, October 8, 1920.

152. In selecting a suit of clothes the texture is the first requisite, the "cut" being the secondary point in mind. Likewise, mere outward finish will never create human quality if hereditary character is not present.

153. Julius Drachsler estimates that of 43,000 Armenian immigrants who entered the United States between 1899 and 1917, nearly 35,000 must have changed their occupation after arrival here. And almost one-half the Greeks change theirs. (See "The Immigrant and the Community," Standard Bulletin of the New York Society of Ethical Culture, November, 1918.)

154. Today sailors of the United States Navy, who are in the main of Anglo-Saxon stock, accept a smaller stipend in an honored calling in preference to higher paid labor of lower social recognition.

155. It is an encouraging sign of the times that American steamship lines, disgusted with the radical tendencies of low-grade foreigners and their union leaders, are giving preference to and encouraging the employment of Americans as seamen. In consequence the standards and conditions of sailors on American ships have risen, and American crews are rapidly replacing the aliens.

156. See William Kent, Congressional Record, December 14, 1912.

157. "Already America has ceased to allure, as of yore, the British, the Germans and the Scandinavians; but it strongly attracts the Italians, Greeks and Slavs. By 1930, perhaps, the opportunities left will have ceased to interest them, but no doubt the Khivans, the Bokhariots, the Persians and the Afghans will regard this as the promised land. By 1950, even they will scorn the chances here, but then, perhaps, the coolies from over-populated India will be glad to take an American wage. But by the last quarter of this century there will remain possibly no people in the world that will care for the chances left in America . . . when the blood of the old pioneering breed has faded out of the motley, polyglot, polychrome, caste-riven population that will crowd this continent to a Chinese density."—American Economic Review, Supplement, Vol. II, No. 1, March, 1912.

158. "Is Europe the only source of foreign labor, and must it remain so to the exclusion of all other continents? And if so, on what grounds?"—Julius Drachsler, "Democracy and Assimilation," 1920.

159. Columns of the New York Times, February 10, 1921.

160. "The figures of the Warsaw Consulate for late 1920 and early 1921 show that of all the visés granted, 12.7 per cent were granted to persons going to husbands or wives; 16.2 per cent were going to parents—and of these very few were minors; 9.3 per cent were parents going to children; 43.3 per cent were going to brothers and sisters; 16.7 per cent were going to cousins and aunts; and 1.8 were going to . . . distant relatives. In most cases the persons to whom they were going are not citizens of the United States."—Kenneth L. Roberts, "The Existence of an Emergency," Saturday Evening Post, April 30, 1921.

161. About eight or nine hundred so-called "Jackson whites" are scattered in groups in the Ramapo Mountains—from Northern Pennsylvania to the foothills of the Catskills. They are descendants of slaves originally owned and liberated by the old Suffern family. During the Revolutionary War, a discontented group of Hessian soldiers deserted and fled to the wilds of the Ramapos, where they joined the former slaves and wandering bands of Indians. Later, other outlaws joined the "Jackie" community. The modern Ramapo mountaineer, from this mixture, has a yellow or brown skin, often light hair and a tendency to albinism. Beards and mustaches are the rule among the males. The "Page Streeters" near Lake Pleasant, New York; the wild inbred community which dwelt in the hills back of Ossipee Lake, New Hampshire; and the "Pineys" of central New Jersey are other cases in point; not to mention the notorious tribe of Jukes.

162. It must be understood, as previously pointed out, that the indentured servants were not wholly a backward type by any means, even though it be true that the majority of the "white trash" of the South were derived from that source. However, the Appalachians were populated not so much by English, Scotch, Irish or German indentured "poor whites," as by the sturdy English from the tidewater region and Scotch-Irish and Germans from the North.

163. See "The Passing of the Great Race," Madison Grant, 1916.

164. Some of the mountaineers, who may never have visited the valleys, have never even seen a Negro. Nevertheless the majority of them have an innate prejudice against the Negro. It is not so much that the institution of slavery drove their ancestors into the mountains, or that they despise people that undergo enforced servitude, as it is the fact of the instinctive racial pride of a pure Nordic people. As a mountaineer in the Great Smokies put it to Horace Kephart, mountaineer-author: "I b'lieve treatin' niggers squar'. The Bible says the're human—leastways some says it does—and so there'd orter be a place for them. But it's *some place else*—not around me!" These moun-



taineers are proud, honest, loyal, capable, kindly, sensitive, hospitable, obliging and easy to uplift, in spite of their aversion to laws imposed owing to the forsaking of the lowland communities by their ancestors in early days. They possess poise, innate dignity, and the thrift actually to raise corn on their rocky mountain sides. They are illiterate and ignorant, perhaps, but not uncultivated. Indeed they sing to this day ballads and songs of Elizabethan England, long forgotten in Great Britain itself. And was it not a young Representative from the mountains of eastern Tennessee (the purest Anglo-Saxon section in the world, incidentally) who furthered the principles of liberty and tolerance of his forefathers, by actually casting the deciding vote to ratify Federal woman suffrage?

165. Possibly many defectives crowded into the mountains of Tennessee, etc., to escape the pressure of economic necessity, and the normals have to some extent been weeded out by emigration. This fact no doubt prevented the building of roads or other improvements, however primitive, and thus prohibited intercourse with the outside world in the past. North of the line of the Ohio population rapidly increases. South of the river, in the uplands of Kentucky, West Virginia and Tennessee, from which there has always been a constant emigration of the more progressive elements, the increase is now comparatively slow.

166. The history of the Australian convict colony proved to some extent that there is a potential power in the most miserable strata of the Anglo-Saxon communities, although not all the Australian "convicts" would have been looked upon as criminals at the present day. Indeed a large proportion of them were Irish political prisoners.

167. Incidentally, the pure Anglo-Saxon mountaineers drift down to the foot of the Great Smokies to engage in the building trades. Thus in our very midst we may have the unskilled, but adaptable, labor to take the place of unassimilable Europeans. As a matter of fact, the Federal war against moonshiners may force more mountaineers than ever to seek the marts of the outside world. Of course, in this event, we should have to eliminate the sweatshops and replace them with sanitary surroundings. It is significant also, that Sergeant Alvin York, "greatest hero of the war" and himself a mountaineer, is even now undertaking to establish a system of schools in which to educate the young men and women of Appalachia. There is, throughout the United States, a shocking contrast between the splendid schools for poor children living in towns and cities, and the fearfully inadequate schools for poor children in country districts. Yet the families of country children do vastly more to provide education for their children than do the families of poor children living in the cities. The concentrated wealth of the cities which provides such fine educational institutions, is drawn from the country as a

whole. And yet it is the Anglo-Saxons from the little country schoolhouse that rule the United States, in spite of the opportunities afforded to the city communities.

168. There recurs to the mind of the writer an incident that happened while he was in command of an infantry company at Camp Custer, Michigan. A recruit arrived who could speak hardly a word of English, and yet who claimed (through an interpreter) to have been born in the United States. It developed that he had been brought up in a recluse Finnish mining community in northern Michigan, where he had never come into daily contact with English-speaking folk. The Finnish or Rumanian village in northern Michigan is very likely to be quite as backward as it was in the old country.

169. "The world has been worrying itself of late about the birth rate. . . . Yet the world knows that surplus populations are today stifling certain countries, and will eventually stifle others. The test for survival is to be, increasingly, one of possessing the *best human stock and no more of it than can properly exist* . . . The question of rate of increase pales into nothingness before the question of what sort of stock is supplying the increase."—Seth K. Humphrey, "Mankind," 1917.

170. The rate of increase of white population, exclusive of net immigration, does not appear to have fallen off in the decade 1910-1920. In 1920 immigration decreased about 3,000,000 under the 1910 figure. This loss in immigration for the decade would seem to account for over half the 6 per cent loss in the percentage increase of the whole country. Furthermore, the comparatively large increase in emigration would account for a good part of the rest of the 6 per cent loss. Minor factors in the decrease for the country were the influenza epidemic, war losses, and the lowering of the birth rate as a result of four million young men being enlisted in the army, and others being engaged in war activities.

171. Overpopulation is one of the most appalling dangers in the world today. China, Russia and India are menaced by starvation and disease from the rapid multiplication of backward peoples. War for the possession of land will be the inevitable result and the people of intellectual superiority will win over mere numbers, however vast. But in India a terrific death rate already limits the degree of increase.

172. It is said that thousands of Negroes may be imported into California to take the place of the Japanese as soon as the latter are excluded.

In his remarkable speech of October 26, 1921, in Birmingham, Alabama, President Harding said: "It is probable that as a nation we have come to the end of the period of very rapid in-

crease in our population. Restricted immigration will reduce the rate of increase, and force us back upon our older population to find people to do the simpler, physically harder manual tasks. This will require some difficult readjustments.

"In anticipation of such a condition the South may well recognize that the North and West are likely to continue their drafts upon its colored population, and that if the South wishes to keep its fields producing and its industry still expanding it will have to compete for the services of the colored man."—(Columns of the N. Y. Times, October 27, 1921.)

173. Professor Lescohier, University of Wisconsin.

Besides, not so long ago there were demands of coal miners for a five-day week because there was not employment for a whole year. Why cannot such men be spared from the mines in summer to work on the farms or in other lines of endeavor, being returned to the mines in the fall? Let the Government re-establish the Federal employment bureaus and provide suitable work at living wages for all those willing to work. Textile and clothing factories could be placed in every farming country, to give work and emolument to farmers and their families and hired help who may need work during the idle five or six months of the year. Likewise provide manufacturing work for carpenters, painters, mechanics and skilled laborers of various kinds to tide them over their off spells. In that case, it would doubtless be found to be a fact that there are so many working people of all kinds in the country that it would be difficult to provide anything like steady work for all of them, unless immigration were stopped.

174. If we are to become a manufacturing country, rather than a farming nation, or a nation exporting raw materials, then we are being brought into more direct competition with such highly developed manufacturing countries as England and Germany, who depend on skilled labor and machinery to make goods of high quality. Thus our industrial concerns are blindly demanding more cheap labor in the hopelessly race in which American goods in quantity will be pitted against foreign goods of quality.

175. In their book, "America's Resources," Gilbert and Pogue declare that the toil affected through machinery would otherwise demand the toil of 3,000,000,000 hard-driven slaves. Contemplation of this astounding figure makes the need of unskilled labor seem merely trivial.

176. The project to develop hydro-electric energy from the Colorado River is an example of the growing tendency to supplant man power by the forces of nature.

177. See Arno Desch, in *World's Work*, October, 1913.

178. See Edwin Grant Conklin, "Some Biological Aspects of Immigration," Scribner's, March, 1921.

179. Kenneth L. Roberts, "The Existence of an Emergency," *Saturday Evening Post*, April 30, 1921.

180. An additional ban which operates against Protestant-Catholic intermarriage (and even fraternization) is the arbitrary rule of the Roman Catholic Church that mixed marriages must not be solemnized within that Church without the mutual promise of both parties that all children of the union be brought up in the Catholic faith.

A recent official Census of the Catholic Church estimates the number of Catholics in continental United States at 17,735,563. In general this figure includes millions of persons of Irish, German, French, French Canadian, Italian, Polish and Spanish American descent, not to mention the descendants of Lord Baltimore's Catholics. In respect to the latter, it is interesting to observe that the city of Baltimore, which they settled, is to this day the center of Catholic influence in the United States.

181. After their sojourn in Holland, the Pilgrims themselves recognized the heritage of the English tongue and Anglo-Saxon life and ideals; and it was the very thought of saving that heritage for their children that induced them to cross the treacherous sea to found an Anglo-Saxon community in America. This action of the Pilgrims represents but one of the ties that bind the two vast English-speaking democracies in mutual regard.

182. It is rather significant that the Northern Peace Union of Stockholm, after an inquiry among many philologists, business men and international administrators, petitioned the King to introduce English as the fundamental foreign language to be taught in Swedish schools.

183. "To feel that the powers of attraction and assimilation of America are tremendous, is both true and patriotic; but to practice the belief that such powers can work miracles—such as the rapid conversion of the mixed and unstable immigrants of Europe into *real* American citizens—is sheer superstition and, as such, the child of ignorance. . . . One of the lessons of the Great War of peculiar significance to us in relation to our immigration problem is the tremendous strength of national or ethnic sentiment. . . . Right or wrong, happily or not, the racial call persists, potent, assertive, even audacious. . . . Nationality . . . may be swift and almost sudden with certain types of unusual men . . . but for the great mass of aliens coming here,—and even for many children of alien parents,—the change can be only slow and subtle in its workings, if it is to be real and enduring.

"Many politicians and some students have lacked the courage to say what one, like myself, of foreign descent should frankly assert and defend—that this is, and must remain, an essentially and fundamentally American country, to be governed solely by American-minded men in an exclusively American way, and for wholly American ideals. Any compromise on this seems to me

spiritual treason to the Republic. Shame to those of us, not of the old stock, who fail in these days of trouble for our country to defend with all our heart and mind what is first and foremost the heritage of freedom to the old stock, and is ours only in so far as we are individually worthy of it, and not because we can vote under it.

"There have been too many sentimental pleas, too many spurious arguments about this being a land of immigrants and all Americans the children of immigrants. What is America, first and above all, if not the development, essentially, of Anglo-Saxon ways of thinking and doing . . . ? Nor must we overlook the fact that 'in all history', as John Fiske has pointed out, 'there has been no other instance of colonization so exclusively effected by picked and chosen men as in New England.' . . . Who will be so foolish, or so hypocritical, as to contend that the vast majority, or even a substantial number, of the immigrants who have come or are coming to this country can be classed as the 'picked and chosen men' of Europe? Political cowardice, squeamish conscientiousness, and cant have avoided a frank, open, and frontal attack against what is variously styled 'the Irish vote,' 'the East Side vote,' and the like, as if the toleration of anything but a thoroughly and wholly American vote were not a gross failure in the practice of an elementary American Duty. . . . The duty, then, of every Irishman and grandson of Irishmen, of every Italian and son of Italians, in this land is to conform his moral character to American political institutions; to conform, not his speech or even merely his vote, but his every thought and hope and plan—for it must be an unreserved spiritual conformity—to this, his country. There cannot be two nationalisms even if one is major and one minor, even if one claims to be American first and German second."—Gino C. Speranza, in the *Atlantic Monthly*, February, 1920.

184. "Is there an American type? In the consideration of this question it is important to avoid the confusion of nation with race which is so often met with. . . . Another bar to such identification is that while a Jew can no more change his race than an Ethiopion can his skin, he can assume English, French or American nationality with very little trouble."—Editorial, *New York Sun*, May 25, 1908.

"It is now almost universally held as a proven fact that traits acquired through mental impression are not transmitted to offspring. Training, education, discipline, do not get into the blood. All inheritance comes through the germ-plasm. . . . The germ-plasm cannot be educated or uplifted. . . . Development of the individual is transitory in effect and does not accomplish race development."—Seth K. Humphrey, "Mankind," 1917.

185. From data derived from a close inspection of 100,000 marriage certificates issued in New York City, Julius Drachslar has brought to light interesting truths concerning the amalgamation of the American population in a heterogeneous community. (See "Democracy and Assimilation: The Blending of Immigrant Heritages in America.")



Professor Drachsler shows conclusively that Jews and Negroes intermarry least frequently with other nationalities; the Slavs and Italians intermarry somewhat oftener with other nationalities than themselves; the Irish ratio of intermarriage is low, probably because of religious preference; and the Northwestern European people marry with little respect to nationality. Also he shows that Western European Jews far outdistance the Russian and Rumanian Jews in intermarriage with other nationalities. Significantly enough, the relatively high amalgamation of the Nordic peoples is laid to lack of racial and religious barriers, long residence and similarity of language and culture. It is observed that the difference between intermarriage in the first generation and that of the second is astonishingly small. It is a fact that the average number of distinct nationalities with which persons of a group intermarry is cut to one-half in the second generation.

186. As an instance of this tendency, we may cite the outbreak of race warfare at West Frankfort, Illinois, between Italians and English-speaking residents, in which lives were lost and the militia called out.

187. Until 1882 the German element was vastly predominant among the Jews, but since that time the influx of Russian and Polish Jews has been prodigious. In the early period little disfavor was shown toward the Jews by the other inhabitants, but later animosity was provoked by the lower elements among the Eastern Jews because of their uncleanly habits, their custom of living in congested communities, their litigious spirit, and their insolence upon being endowed with freedom and prosperity. The American people must eventually, and very soon, rise in protest against the assisted immigration that dumps this class of people on our shores. They are a curse to the country and a bane to the true Jews who have earned an enviable record in the United States. The Jew who has the good name of the Chosen People at heart should help to prevent the worst class of his co-religionists from coming here. Only a desire to gain Jewish votes for the promulgation of Jewish "world rule" can explain the attitude of anti-restrictionist Jews of the better type in America.

188. Can any one still listen to vague remarks as to the "melting pot," when we may daily observe the social and political divergences in the race life of the American people? Certainly the alien influx has had a marked influence in changing the general character of our population in the Eastern States. And, if this condition is to persist, it might well be foreseen that the comparatively homogeneous populations of our South and West may actually develop a positive antipathy to the people of the East. Already comments on the part of the people of the West and the South are all too frequent as to the quality of our population in the East. In other words, if immigration of Southern and Eastern Europeans into our Eastern States continues, the day will finally arrive (if it has not done so already) when the

United States, from an anthropological standpoint, may be likened to Europe itself—that is to say, our West and South would be analogous to Northwest Europe, in the racial character of their populations, while our Eastern States might be likened to central and Southern Europe, with its horde of Iberian and Alpine populations overlaid by a thin stratum of Nordic aristocracy.

189. Although race prejudice is not in general a factor in South America, and though fusion of red, black, yellow and white (under the political guidance of the latter, to be sure) would seem to make certain the formation of a mongrel stock, it is nevertheless true that biological process is gradually breeding out the minor or less persistent stocks. Thus Indian blood is predominant in the Andes region and the central and northern part of the continent. Negroes are counted by the millions in northeastern Brazil. In Peru the Chinese shopkeepers and laborers have so intermarried with the Indian women that their progeny, known as Chino-Cholos, threaten to be the basic strain of the Peruvians in the years to come. Only Argentina, Southern Brazil, Uruguay and Chile can retain their Caucasian character, as the result of the constant influx of Northern and Southern Italians, Portuguese, Spaniards and other Europeans.

190. For distribution of alien colonies or nationalities in the Metropolis, see maps in "Statistical Sources for Demographic Studies in New York City," edited by Walter Laidlaw.

191. Rossiter, "What Are Americans?" *Atlantic Monthly*, August, 1921.

"Unquestionably more than half the total population of the United States claims British ancestry, and most of it English ancestry." (From the Pamphlet published by the Section "Americans of English Lineage" of the America's Making Exposition, New York 1921, prepared under the supervision of Professors Dunning, Muzzey and Schuyler, of Columbia University.)

192. There were but 1,035,680 Irish-born in the United States in 1920, a decrease as compared to the total in 1910. Some of these were of course Protestants from Ulster.

193. The Irish Gaels claimed that their possession of an ancient Gaelic tongue (which is now spoken in but a few parts of Ireland) entitled them to consideration as a separate nationality, and hence entitled them to the "dignity of self-determination." But be it remembered that there are some 3,400 spoken languages and dialects throughout the world, and each of these would also be entitled to "self-determination." Lloyd-George has truly said: "I believe our ideal of combining unity with home rule is a finer and nobler ideal than excessive nationalism, which will have nothing less than isolation—which is the Sinn Féin creed, and which, if it had full play, would Balkanize the world."

Yet it is very possible that the turbulent temperament of some Irishmen is due to racial heritage. Ripley says in this connec-

tion: "It (the Celtic temperament) points vaguely in the direction of a Mediterranean blend in the Welsh and Irish, even to a lesser degree in the Highland Scotch." ("Races of Europe", William Z. Ripley, 1900). Yet most authorities, including Ripley, declare that the racial stocks of Great Britain and Ireland resemble each other as to physical features in many respects more than any peoples of continental Europe. In other words, from the anthropological and biological viewpoint, the British and Irish populations must be looked upon as one. The Eastern parts of Ireland were penetrated at an early date by Nordic Saxons and Northmen, as well as the later Normans. In more modern times, Cromwell imposed a layer of land-owners far more numerous than their dwindling estates of the present day would indicate. Some of the former's Yorkshiremen, mixed with even the West Irish, bring forth a progeny of an excellent Anglo-Celtic type. Nevertheless the people of Western Ireland retain their ancient Iberian or Neanderthal characteristics to some extent, it being noticeable that a darker physical type prevails among the West Irish than among the essentially Nordic folk of Eastern Ireland. Furthermore, whether from racial or environmental causes, the cultural development of the Western Irish has continually remained several stages behind that of the rest of the British Isles.

It is an ethnic faculty of the Irish, particularly the Western Irish, to hand down by word of mouth from parent to child the traditions of ancestors long dead, and this moulded to a great extent the anachronistic views of the Irish people in general. Appalling ignorance and illiteracy augments this practice. And the disposition to proselytize in Irish affairs has periodically stirred the fires of foreign propaganda in the United States, where it should have had no place whatsoever. Unfortunately it was the so-called "shanty" Irish of the West coast of Ireland, who tended to live in segregated communities in New York, New England and elsewhere, that were a menace to Americanism and fanned religious and national animosities. On the other hand, the true Celts, or pre-Teutonic Nordics, of Eastern Ireland, the large, fair type of Irishmen, tended to assimilate with the American population and to rise in the economic scale, from the newly arrived policemen of New York to the judges, business men and statesmen.

194. Federation for the peoples of Eastern Europe is inevitable, for they are indispensable to one another. The same is true, to a lesser extent perhaps, of Northwestern and of Southern Europe.

195. The World War brought monumental changes to the minds and lives of the world's people, and the colored races were no exception to this rule. But while it must be admitted that the awakening of the colored populations throughout the earth is a menace to Nordic dominance, yet at the same time it will prove of inestimable benefit to the Nordic race itself, in effecting its solidarity as nothing else would. Thus, the question of Jap-

anese immigration has intensified the natural race aloofness of the Japanese and English-speaking peoples, which is indeed a rather bad sign for the future; yet it is reassuring to observe how quickly it has brought into common agreement such Anglo-Saxon communities as Australia, New Zealand, British Columbia and our own Pacific Coast States, to combat their mutual peril.

In the light of coming events, it appears foolhardy for the United States to prevent Japan from finding an outlet in Siberia. John Hays Hammond (in the *New York Herald*, February 17, 1921) expressed the hope that Russia, Japan and China eventually might enter into an agreement whereby Russia would give to Japan a section of Siberia the size of California bordering the Gulf of Japan, in exchange for money which would be used by Russia to build a railroad down through China, with a terminus near Peking. He said that Russia did not need the tract, which is rich in iron and coal and is sparsely populated; but that the land would give Japan the ores it needs, and is climatically favorable for Japanese settlement.

Whatever is the policy of the government of the United States in objecting to Japanese occupation of the remaining half of Saghalin Island, and the setting up of "buffer states" in the Southern part of Siberia, it appears certain that Japan is using the land and immigration question in California as a lever to gain her own ends, which latter are obviously concessions in Asia. The Russians have proven their incapacity to rule an Asiatic empire, through their subservience to Bolshevism. After all, "Asia should be for the Asiatics," and why should not at least a part of Siberia be regarded as an outlet for the yellow races? The maritime provinces of Siberia are sparsely populated (in contrast to our own California) and why should we feel it our duty to demand all Siberia for the Russians, when by so doing we are increasing our own Japanese problem?

It is inevitable that great migrations of humans, both white and yellow, must occur in the years to come. The future will see the Nordics filling North America, Australia, South Africa and New Zealand; the Mediterraneans populating the irrigated territory of the Barbary States and the Southern region of South America. The Slavs will surge through the steppes and spread out into western Siberia or beyond. But will it be possible to resist the expansion and growth of the yellow peoples while this is going on? Can we do more than only temporarily keep the Japanese out of eastern Siberia?

196. Switzerland and Belgium are two successful examples of federation which portend the realization of greater federal systems in Europe.

197. The dwindling of the French population is significant, not only because the birth rate does not equal the death rate, but because the intelligent part of the French people, that is the middle and richer classes, who are drifting to the sterile cities, contribute less than thirty per cent of the population of France,

while the poorer classes contribute more than seventy per cent. Then, too, the flight of the Huguenots, and other emigration in Colonial years, drained France of her best Nordic blood among the upper classes, except, of course, in the Northern provinces, where the Nordic strain has always been predominant and the Alpine subordinate. Thus the French population is declining both with respect to quantity and quality, and with such a contingency France must either eventually join a Latin confederation or else turn to Northwest Europe for protection.

What is more, tendencies exist even in the nationalistic French Republic that lead one to suppose that it is not so certain that France might not some day disintegrate. There is much regional provincialism; likewise one finds marked temperamental differences between those speaking the langue d'Oïl dialect and those speaking Provençal; as for the Bretons and Basques, they speak distinct languages. In tongue and in customs the Northern French are very closely associated with the Walloons, the Flemish, the Germans; and the Bretons (in part the descendants of Norse marauders, but nevertheless speaking a Cymric tongue) can comprehend the native dialect of the bi-lingual Welsh. On the other hand, most anthropologists and statesmen agree that the dark Provençal can adapt himself to the North African Colonies, whereas the fairer Northern Frenchman is bred out in that region and clime.

198. H. H. Powers, "America Among the Nations," 1919.

"Mr. Vanderlip tells us that one of the problems definitely confronting the British government is that of transporting five or six millions of the population of England to countries nearer the food supply, it being impossible to feed them in England

"Mr. Herbert Hoover declares that Germany under the new terms of peace must part with at least 12,000,000 of her population."—H. H. Powers, "The American Era," 1920.

199. Lothrop Stoddard, "The Rising Tide of Color," 1920.

200. Seth K. Humphrey, "Mankind," 1917.

201. Lothrop Stoddard, "The Rising Tide of Color," 1920.

202. Edward Alsworth Ross, "The Old World in the New," 1914.

203. Walker, "Discussions in Economics and Statistics," (Quoted in the Literary Digest, January 29, 1921.)

204. It is to be noted that India, with a population of some 319,000,000 in 1921, had an increase of hardly 4,000,000 for the decade since 1911.

205. See Kenneth L. Roberts, "Ports of Embarkation," Saturday Evening Post, May 7, 1921.



206. "The standard of living and the standard of citizenship of a nation are its most precious possessions, and the preservation and elevation of those standards is the first duty of our Government. The immigration policy of the United States should be such as to insure that the number of foreigners in the country at any one time shall not exceed that which can be assimilated with reasonable rapidity, and to favor immigrants whose standards are similar to ours. The selective tests that are at present applied should be improved by requiring a higher physical standard, a more complete exclusion of mental defectives and of criminals and a more effective inspection applied as near the source of immigration as possible, as well as at the port of entry. . . . The existing policy of the United States for the practical exclusion of Asiatic immigrants is sound, and should be maintained." (From the National Republican party platform plank on immigration, 1920.)

307. The Tokio                      says: "When 1,500,000 Jews made their way from Russia to America, it startled the world, but the . . . . Japanese immigrants in America number only 70,000 or 80,000." (Translated in the Literary Digest, January 7, 1921.)

208. Thomas Bailey Aldrich, "Unguarded Gates," Atlantic Monthly, April, 1892.

# APPENDIX 1—STATISTICAL TABLES

TABLE 1—POPULATION 1910, BY MOTHER TONGUE.\*

Linguistic Group and Mother Tongue	Foreign-Born White	Both Parents Foreign-Born†	Father Born in Country Designated Mother Native†	Linguistic Group and Mother Tongue	Foreign-Born White	Both Parents Foreign-Born†	Father Born in Country Designated Mother Native†
English, Celtic*	3,363,792	3,813,444	1,727,987	Serbian.....	23,403	3,040	259
Germanic:				Montenegrin.....	3,886	70	5
German.....	2,759,032	4,147,771	1,368,278	Bulgarian.....	18,341	841	154
Dutch, Frisian.....	126,045	138,297	40,523	Slavic, not specified.....	21,012	13,513	499
Flemish.....	25,780	14,443	3,437	Lithuanian, Lettish.....	140,963	66,905	2,826
Scandinavian:				Unclassified:			
Swedish.....	683,218	609,689	97,906	Yiddish, Hebrew.....	1,051,767	596,921	21,748
Norwegian.....	402,587	443,391	106,531	Magyar.....	229,094	85,240	4,927
Danish.....	186,345	188,515	50,370	Finnish.....	120,086	75,362	3,404
Latin and Greek:				Armenian.....	23,938	5,643	410
Italian.....	1,365,110	723,739	55,153	Syrian, Arabic.....	32,868	13,031	704
French.....	528,842	503,943	215,510	Turkish.....	4,709	608	100
Spanish.....	258,131	124,057	44,215	Albanian.....	2,312	45	9
Portuguese.....	72,649	54,609	12,180	All other.....	846	103	35
Rumanian.....	42,277	8,263	443	Unknown.....	116,272	106,579	56,070
Greek.....	118,379	8,971	2,548	All mother tongues.....	13,345,545	12,916,311	.....
Slavic and Lettic:				English, Celtic.....	3,363,792	3,813,444	1,727,987
Polish.....	943,781	690,067	56,455	Germanic.....	2,910,857	4,300,511	1,412,238
Bohemian, Moravian.....	228,738	245,482	41,724	Scandinavian.....	1,272,150	1,241,595	254,807
Slovak.....	166,474	113,486	3,482	Latin, Greek.....	2,385,388	1,423,582	330,049
Russian.....	57,926	34,263	2,366	Slavic, Lettic.....	1,831,666	1,253,647	111,357
Ruthenian.....	25,131	9,990	2,659	Unclassified.....	1,465,420	776,953	31,337
Slovenian.....	123,631	56,647	2,659	Unknown.....	116,272	106,579	56,070
Serbo-Croatian:							
Croatian.....	74,036	18,333	583				
Dalmatian.....	4,344	1,010	145				

\* The above figures on the foreign-born population of the United States make no distinction as to the length of residence in this country as they include those who have been here fifty years or more as well as immigrants who arrived during the first three months of 1910, just before the census was taken. The increase in the number of foreign born from year to year does not represent necessarily the number of immigrants who come to the United States. The foreign born are constantly being drawn upon by return migration and by death, and immigration must make up for these losses before there can be any increase in the total number.

The figures given above relate only to conditions as shown by the reports of the Federal Census, taken as of April 15, 1910, and no cognizance is taken of the large body of immigrants who have come to this country since that date.

† Includes "mixed foreign parentage" according to mother tongue of the father only. As the Census Bureau points out, if the persons of mixed foreign parentage were classified according to mother tongue of the mother as well as according to the mother tongue of the father, they would be counted twice. Broadly speaking it is probable that "the economic and social status (in addition to the patronymic or line of descent) of a family is determined somewhat more by the mother tongue or birthplace of the father than by that of the mother." Consequently in the case of persons of mixed foreign parentage as well as of mixed foreign and native parentage it is deemed best to classify them according to mother tongue of the father only.

TABLE II  
By Country of Origin—Census of 1910

Country of Origin	Total	Foreign Born White	Both Parents Born in Same Country	Both Parents Foreign Born, Father Born In Country Designated †	Father Born in Country Designated Mother Native†
England . . . . .	2,206,625	876,455	592,285	191,670	546,215
Scotland and Wales . . . .	905,829	343,513	260,325	104,209	197,782
Ireland . . . . .	4,248,555	1,352,155	2,141,577	151,810	603,013
Germany, Switzerland, . .	8,837,435	2,626,015	4,002,516	253,167	1,955,737
Scandinavia . . . . .	2,868,600	1,250,662	1,105,387	124,222	280,229
Holland and Belgium . . .	403,687	169,450	142,779	20,849	70,609
France . . . . .	343,295	117,236	78,937	50,906	96,216
Canada {French . . . . .	947,792	385,083	330,976	15,554	216,179
(B. N. A.) {English . . . . .	1,908,410	816,063	309,127	77,398	705,822
Mexico (white and In- dian) . . . . .	363,422	219,802	107,866	759	34,995

† See footnote Table I. The Census Report 1910 (Chapter VIII, Vol. 1) says: "It is obvious that if such persons (of "mixed" foreign parentage) were classified both according to birthplace of the father and according to birthplace of the mother they would be counted twice."

TABLE III-A. Immigration, April 1910 (1910 Census as of April 15) to January 1, 1920 (1920 Census as of January 1), and in each fiscal year ending in June, by races or peoples, and estimate of gain by rate of increase of immigrants after arrival.

Race or people	2 1/2 Mths. ended * June 30, 1910	1911	1912	1913	1914	1915	1916	1917	1918	1919	6 Mos. ended Dec. 31, 1919	Total for the Decade	Approx. gain by rate of increase f
African (black) . . . . .	993	6,721	6,759	6,634	8,447	5,660	4,576	7,971	5,706	5,823	3,865	63,155	3,114
Bohemian and Moravian . . . . .	1,101	3,092	5,222	9,353	7,785	932	964	1,221	221	282	560	30,733	2,057
Bulgarian, Serbian and Montenegrin . . . . .	1,692	9,223	8,439	11,091	9,928	1,651	642	327	74	105	176	43,348	3,167
Chinese . . . . .	3,026	10,222	10,657	9,087	15,084	3,506	3,146	1,134	1,500	205	329	56,546	3,958
Croatian & Slovenian . . . . .	3,354	1,307	1,608	2,022	2,354	1,307	2,239	1,843	1,576	136	1,166	18,653	881
Cuban . . . . .	7,912	18,982	24,366	42,499	37,284	1,932	791	3,305	3,305	23	1,770	13,216	9,900
Dalmatian, Bosnian, and Herzegovinian . . . . .	666	3,914	3,155	3,099	3,539	3,402	3,442	3,428	1,179	1,169	1,067	28,000	1,547
Dutch and Flemish . . . . .	982	4,400	3,672	4,520	5,149	305	114	94	15	4	15	19,270	1,437
East Indian . . . . .	2,602	13,862	10,335	14,507	12,566	6,675	6,443	5,393	2,200	2,735	4,693	82,611	4,977
English . . . . .	356	517	165	188	172	82	80	69	61	68	91	1,849	130
Finnish . . . . .	10,700	57,258	49,689	55,522	51,746	38,662	36,146	32,246	12,980	26,889	28,714	400,574	22,066
French . . . . .	3,147	9,779	6,641	12,756	12,805	3,472	5,649	5,900	1,867	968	671	40,555	4,011
German . . . . .	14,276	66,471	18,382	20,662	18,166	12,636	11,555	24,405	6,840	12,598	13,929	169,479	8,468
Greek . . . . .	7,827	37,021	65,343	80,665	79,871	20,729	11,555	9,682	1,992	1,837	1,957	335,456	24,938
Hebrew . . . . .	16,852	91,223	80,595	38,644	45,581	15,187	27,792	25,919	2,602	813	1,321	234,209	14,767
Irish . . . . .	7,656	40,246	33,922	101,330	138,051	26,497	15,108	17,342	3,672	3,055	1,927	497,456	34,273
Italian (North) . . . . .	6,156	30,312	26,443	37,023	33,598	23,503	20,636	17,462	4,657	7,910	7,617	234,580	14,202
Italian (South) . . . . .	38,534	159,638	135,630	42,534	44,802	10,660	4,905	37,964	1,074	1,236	4,543	176,461	12,424
Japanese . . . . .	559	4,575	6,872	23,163	25,162	46,557	33,909	35,154	5,234	2,137	25,384	965,602	65,262
Korean . . . . .	8	33	33	8,302	8,941	8,609	8,711	8,925	10,168	10,056	4,622	79,640	3,430
Lithuanian . . . . .	4,543	17,027	14,078	24,647	15,152	146	154	194	149	77	32	1,013	40
Magyar . . . . .	5,460	19,996	23,599	24,584	22,584	2,638	699	479	135	160	222	86,112	6,308
Mexican . . . . .	3,562	13,986	23,599	30,610	44,338	3,604	981	434	32	52	85	129,391	9,282
Pacific Islander . . . . .	25,662	18,793	22,001	10,934	13,089	10,993	17,198	16,438	17,602	28,844	22,291	181,746	7,729
Polish . . . . .	71,446	85,163	174,365	123,657	111,657	9,055	4,502	3,109	668	732	10	93	36,122
Portuguese . . . . .	1,331	7,469	8,403	17,366	13,647	4,376	12,208	10,194	2,319	1,574	4,281	76,568	4,181
Romanian . . . . .	2,459	5,311	8,329	13,366	14,970	1,200	4,353	3,572	1,553	89	272	57,191	3,932
Russian . . . . .	3,459	18,721	23,558	51,432	44,970	4,433	1,365	3,721	1,513	1,582	1,245	158,485	10,710
Ruthenian (Russiak) . . . . .	5,581	17,724	21,065	30,585	36,727	2,933	1,211	1,211	49	1,103	93	118,331	8,495
Scandinavian (Norwegians, Danes, and Swedes) . . . . .	10,407	45,859	31,601	38,737	38,053	24,263	19,172	19,596	8,741	8,261	7,707	250,397	15,396
Scotch . . . . .	4,922	25,625	20,293	21,293	18,997	14,310	13,515	13,350	5,204	10,364	9,754	157,627	8,917
Slovak . . . . .	6,483	21,415	25,281	27,284	25,917	2,069	577	244	305	85	536	106,781	8,189
Spanish . . . . .	1,167	8,068	9,070	9,042	11,064	5,705	9,259	15,019	7,909	4,224	5,115	85,642	4,172
Spanish American . . . . .	180	1,153	1,342	1,363	1,544	1,687	1,881	2,587	2,231	3,092	2,085	19,125	729
Syrian . . . . .	1,261	5,444	5,255	9,210	9,023	1,767	676	476	210	231	429	34,752	2,395
Turkish . . . . .	2,566	918	1,336	2,015	2,693	216	216	216	24	18	39	8,242	554
Welsh . . . . .	449	2,248	2,239	2,820	2,558	1,390	983	793	278	608	695	15,061	719
West Indian (except Cuban) . . . . .	230	1,141	1,132	1,171	1,396	823	948	1,369	732	1,223	711	10,876	529
Other peoples . . . . .	666	3,323	3,660	3,038	3,830	1,877	3,388	2,097	314	247	275	22,715	1,402
Total . . . . .	208,273	878,587	838,172	1,197,892	1,218,480	326,700	298,826	295,403	110,618	141,132	162,883	5,676,966	384,715

\* Approximate figures.

f By descending scale of natural increase, i. e., for the fiscal year 1919 1%, and for the six months following a fraction too negligible to be considered. This assumption is arrived at from the knowledge that the general increase by natural growth in the United States for the decade was somewhat over 10%; from which we may judge that the immigrant and emigrant elements, in their relation to the American population, must have had a potential or latent growth respectively approximating 1% per annum for the ten years. It is obvious that those immigrants who came in the latter part of the decade had more time to add to their numbers than those immigrants who came in the latter part of the decade. On the other hand, those immigrants who came in the latter part of the decade were a greater potential loss to the country than those who departed in the decade.

# APPENDIX

319

TABLE 1. Immigration and naturalization, by race or people, as of Jan. 1, 1914, and in each year, 1911-1913, by rates or peoples, and estimate of increase during the decade, after their departure from the United States.

Race or people	2 1/2 Mos. ended June 30, 1910*	1911	1912	1913	1914	1915	1916	1917	1918	1919	6 Mos. ended Dec. 31, 1919	Total for the Decade	Poten- tial in- crease after de- parture during decade †
African (black) .....	185	913	1,288	1,671	1,805	1,644	1,684	1,497	1,291	976	583	13,537	659
Armenian .....	104	718	718	676	1,250	444	659	133	1,238	11	179	6,411	358
Bohemian and Mora- vian (Czech) .....	188	1,208	1,149	871	1,011	219	42	59	455	412	65	5,679	369
Bulgarian, Serbian, and Montenegrin ..	544	6,472	7,349	13,525	5,780	2,354	290	325	918	3,241	13,588	54,386	2,708
Chinese .....	576	2,716	2,549	2,250	2,059	1,959	2,148	1,799	2,062	2,062	1,578	21,935	1,090
Croatian & Slovenian	1,426	13,735	10,209	10,209	14,440	2,381	76	24	31	154	5,598	62,037	4,200
Cuban .....	311	2,234	1,963	1,264	947	2,536	1,454	2,395	1,141	898	918	16,061	823
Dalmatian, Bosnian, and Herzegovinian ..	86	935	927	849	878	105	4 <sup>1</sup>	6	13	2	336	4,141	269
Dutch and Flemish ..	238	1,659	1,816	2,252	2,252	1,340	742	742	698	1,356	1,641	14,659	753
East Indian .....	16	75	104	213	143	162	91	136	154	106	52	1,312	65
English .....	1,301	9,432	10,341	10,794	11,187	10,372	7,826	6,316	12,810	9,406	7,483	97,268	4,605
Finnish .....	255	4,219	4,148	3,053	845	5,799	543	1,256	1,596	4,977	7,988	20,151	1,266
French .....	806	3,400	4,189	4,019	2,330	2,927	2,297	2,829	5,427	5,472	4,517	41,685	1,809
German .....	2,660	15,243	15,026	11,371	11,377	2,749	873	767	563	343	1,417	63,489	4,600
Greek .....	1,763	11,134	13,323	31,556	11,266	9,767	4,855	2,082	2,952	15,562	13,142	117,402	6,089
Hebrew .....	1,138	6,401	7,418	6,697	6,826	1,524	199	329	687	373	179	31,771	2,273
Irish .....	494	3,300	4,086	4,458	1,851	2,948	1,851	1,736	3,071	1,934	3,271	31,838	1,621
Italian (North) .....	2,686	14,209	13,006	10,995	12,663	7,539	4,020	3,478	1,041	1,195	6,166	76,998	4,792
Italian (South) .....	8,354	62,009	99,881	79,057	72,767	89,969	68,981	10,016	8,135	36,980	61,271	594,420	32,157
Japanese .....	875	3,351	1,501	733	794	825	780	722	1,558	2,127	2,210	15,476	755
Korean .....	27	41	55	44	43	28	29	45	77	23	5	436	23
Lithuanian .....	362	2,430	4,141	3,276	5,322	988	28	38	45	6	4	16,840	1,200
Magyar .....	2,106	18,975	17,575	11,496	14,354	2,262	394	123	41	103	1,665	68,901	5,118
Mexican .....	42	319	325	910	1,670	573	559	759	25,084	17,793	4,496	52,530	976
Pacific Islander .....	1	1	1	2	2	5	3	14	6	2	32	144,285	10,459
Polish .....	3,377	31,932	37,764	24,107	35,028	7,912	358	119	1,035	153	2,480	22,172	833
Portuguese .....	181	1,388	1,747	1,583	1,848	2,526	2,185	1,313	2,016	3,525	3,860	31,933	1,479
Romanian .....	367	5,230	5,824	3,156	3,837	1,899	138	61	61	60	12,300	76,552	4,496
Russian .....	1,136	8,438	9,744	10,548	17,491	11,256	4,716	6,393	4,926	1,717	286	76,552	1,542
Ruthenian (Rusniak)	344	3,838	5,521	5,327	5,049	860	17	21	25	2	26	21,030	1,542
Scand. (Norwegians, Danes and Swedes)	1,006	8,036	10,380	9,291	8,073	3,473	3,954	4,550	4,665	4,865	5,021	63,314	3,399
Scotch .....	398	3,083	3,456	4,118	3,323	2,714	2,096	1,618	3,307	1,687	1,718	28,118	1,469
Slovak .....	1,852	15,501	12,626	9,854	11,786	7,974	7,974	3,34	4,53	1,150	2,581	57,269	4,079
Spanish .....	464	3,174	2,369	3,181	3,214	4,347	2,792	3,524	4,152	7,489	2,909	37,189	1,487
Spanish American ..	77	3,34	343	457	542	560	516	612	736	799	584	5,600	223
Syrian .....	215	1,173	972	797	1,200	433	120	110	160	132	1,347	6,659	367
Turkish .....	211	1,633	1,366	1,297	890	208	41	54	58	275	406	6,439	367
Welsh .....	39	255	301	298	395	253	214	130	263	156	119	2,423	128
West Indian (except Cuban) .....	77	344	530	584	603	480	603	520	426	336	293	4,870	238
Other peoples .....	161	82	1,113	1,118	1,470	511	769	504	1,001	235	1,120	8,864	443
Not specified .....	4,129	25,540	15,201	19,838	17,819	16,888	10,744	9,098	.....	.....	.....	119,257	7,933
Total .....	40,578	295,666	333,262	308,190	303,338	204,074	129,765	66,277	94,555	123,522	166,212	2,065,469	117,597

\*Approximate figures. † See Note at Table A.



TABLE IV.

Immigration 1820-1850 from the United Kingdom to the  
United States

(According to the estimates of the Bureau of Statistics)

	1820-1830	1830-1840	1840-1850
England and Wales .....	22,337	73,328	264,593
Scotland .....	2,912	2,667	3,712
Ireland .....	50,724	207,381	880,719

TABLE V—A

Immigration; April 1910 (1910 Census as of April 15) to Jan. 1920, and in each fiscal year ending in June, by countries; and estimate of gain by rate of increase of immigrants after arrival.

Country	2½ Mos. ended June 30, 1910*	1911	1912	1913	1914	1915	1916	1917	1918	1919	6 Mos. ended Jan. 1, 1920*	Total for the Decade	Approx. gain by rate of increase f
England.....	9,808	52,426	40,408	43,363	35,864	21,562	12,896	8,354	2,037	5,163	13,936	245,817	16,057
Wales.....	445	2,162	2,102	2,745	2,183	1,007	512	513	219	351	627	12,926	826
Scotland.....	4,244	18,796	14,578	14,220	10,682	4,668	2,655	1,868	260	1,283	4,674	77,908	5,339
Ireland.....	6,270	29,112	25,879	24,876	24,688	14,185	8,639	5,406	331	474	4,796	147,656	9,977
Germany.....	6,569	32,061	27,788	34,329	35,734	7,799	2,877	1,857	447	52	501	150,014	10,883
Switzerland.....	742	3,458	3,505	4,104	4,211	1,742	663	911	331	381	1,893	21,941	1,357
France.....	1,550	8,022	8,628	9,675	9,296	4,811	4,156	3,187	1,798	3,379	4,473	58,375	3,375
Holland.....	1,582	8,358	6,619	6,902	6,321	3,144	2,910	2,235	944	1,098	2,594	47,707	2,672
Belgium.....	1,134	5,711	4,169	7,405	5,763	2,399	986	398	73	1,268	3,287	31,593	2,000
Scandinavia.....	10,136	42,285	27,554	32,267	29,391	17,883	14,761	13,771	6,506	5,690	6,722	206,966	13,129

\* Approximate figure. f By descending scale of natural increase. See Table III—A (footnote D).

Emigration for same period as above.

TABLE V—B

Country	2½ Mos. ended June 30, 1910*	1911	1912	1913	1914	1915	1916	1917	1918	1919	6 Mos. ended Jan. 1, 1920*	Total for the Decade	Poten- tial in- crease after de- parture f
England.....	956	5,441	6,700	5,969	7,275	7,715	5,130	2,798	1,239	4,482	4,050	51,755	2,721
Wales.....	18	1,145	1,185	1,157	234	169	118	69	24	54	71	1,244	71
Scotland.....	231	1,528	2,195	2,179	2,464	1,847	1,332	678	141	569	744	13,908	812
Ireland.....	268	1,984	3,082	2,804	3,632	2,218	1,304	1,027	280	988	1,868	19,645	1,094
Germany.....	1,365	6,042	5,785	4,759	5,136	1,419	339	315	28	26	1,540	22,009	1,878
Switzerland.....	359	667	510	449	432	349	201	169	172	403	532	4,053	211
France.....	845	3,148	3,473	3,430	2,927	5,751	2,231	2,064	3,176	3,792	2,253	33,076	1,603
Holland.....	97	461	564	599	690	612	351	227	139	596	509	4,835	240
Belgium.....	138	1,017	1,103	803	1,149	333	224	15	41	634	923	6,180	344
Scandinavia.....	518	3,484	5,465	4,307	5,666	2,676	3,284	3,091	3,203	4,289	3,804	39,757	1,909

\* Approximate figure. f By descending scale of natural increase. See Table III—B (footnote D).

TABLE VI  
(From British Records)

BRITISH PASSENGERS WHO SAILED FROM THE UNITED KINGDOM  
TO NORTH AMERICA, GIVING INDIVIDUAL TOTALS  
OF ENGLISH, IRISH AND SCOTCH.

Year	English to Canada	Scotch to Canada	Irish to Canada	English to U. S. A.	Scotch to U. S. A.	Irish to U. S. A.
1853-60 <sup>2</sup>	3,791	3,550	8,085	24,460	4,383	71,856
1861-70 <sup>2</sup>	6,589	2,434	4,008	36,511	7,667	69,084
1871-80 <sup>2</sup>	12,638	2,581	2,581	54,978	8,807	44,955
1881-90 <sup>2</sup>	22,222	3,519	4,451	90,919	17,816	62,660
1891-95 <sup>2</sup>	17,777	1,717	1,235	74,201	14,342	48,634
1896	12,802	1,563	902	48,434	10,535	39,952
1897	13,442	1,281	848	43,381	9,121	32,882
1898	15,975	1,658	1,065	42,244	7,372	30,878
1899	15,050	1,717	873	45,723	8,128	38,631
1900	13,819	1,703	888	49,445	11,504	41,848
1901	15,748	1,733	962	57,246	11,414	35,535
1902	20,985	3,811	1,497	58,382	12,225	37,891
1903	46,760	10,296	2,596	68,791	15,318	39,554
1904	54,051	12,715	2,915	76,546	17,111	52,788
1905	64,876	14,214	3,347	58,229	19,785	44,356
1906	88,099	22,278	4,482	76,179	23,221	45,417
1907	110,329	33,393	7,494	91,593	24,365	54,306

<sup>2</sup>Annual average between the years stated.

TABLE VII

GENERAL PROPORTIONATE DISTRIBUTION OF THE NORDIC RACE  
(Including Anglo-Saxons, Celts, Germans, Scandinavians, Dutch and  
Flemish, Balts and N. French.)

Country or Region	English Element	Scotch (Lowland Ulster and Highland) and Welsh	Other English- Speaking (Irish, Ger- man, &c.)	Non- English- Speaking	Total Nordic Race
United States (Con- tinental) . . . . .	45,546,000	5,885,000	29,554,000	*	\$80,985,000
British Empire . . . . .	43,730,000	10,970,000	8,839,000	.....	63,539,000
British Isles . . . . .	35,400,000	8,000,000	3,400,000	*	46,800,000
British North Amer. (incl. Br. W. Ind.)	3,200,000	1,800,000	3,850,000	*	\$8,850,000
Commonwealth of Australia . . . . .	3,540,000	820,000	†1,000,000	.....	5,360,000
Dominion of New Zealand . . . . .	860,000	200,000	140,000	.....	1,200,000
Union of So. Africa .	580,000	120,000	750,000	*	1,450,000
Empire of India and Crown Colonies . .	150,000	30,000	20,000	.....	200,000
Eng. speaking Nations Northw't Europe [Un- Kingdom, Germany, Switzerl'd, Austria, Low Countries, No. France, Balticum] . .	35,400,000	10,970,000	3,400,000	110,000,000	159,770,000
North America . . . . .	48,746,000	7,685,000	33,404,000	.....	89,835,000
The World . . . . .	89,276,000	16,855,000	†38,393,000	110,000,000	†‡254,524,000

\* Among the bi-lingual French-Canadians, Boers, Irish and Scotch Gaels, Welsh and certain American communities, there are individuals or groups who speak no English. It is obvious, however, that these are destined to be incorporated sooner or later into the English-speaking community, and hence must be regarded as belonging to the latter.

† Exclusive of many thousands in American, Dutch, Belgian, Danish, French and other colonial possessions.

# Estimate for Canada:

	Canadian Census of "Origins," 1911	Natural Increase (est.) and Immigration 1910-1920	Approx. Tot. 1920
English . . . . .	1,823,150	1,257,000 (incl. almost 1,000,000 English and Anglo-American immigrants) . . . . .	3,000,000
Anglo-Irish . . . . .	1,050,384	100,000 (est.)	775,000
Celtic Irish . . . . .		650,000 (est.)	
Scotch-Irish . . . . .		300,000 (est.)	
Scotch and Welsh . . . . .	1,023,451	404,000 (including about 200,000 Scottish-American and Scottish immigrants) . . . . .	1,800,000
French . . . . .	2,054,890	230,000 . . . . .	2,285,000
Germans, Swiss, Austrian, Dutch, Belgian, Scandina- vian . . . . .	614,594	100,000 (probably thousands of Germans and Scandinavians were included in the migration from the United States to Cana- da before 1914. It is significant that the number of German- born in the U. S. decreased 800,000 between 1910 and 1920	700,000

Unspecified (Ameri-  
can, etc.) . . . . . 185,032

Estimate for Newfoundland:

The Protestant (Anglo-Saxon) element in Newfoundland in 1911 was 157,493 (of which but 1,876 were Scotch Presbyterians) and the Catholic (French and Irish) element was 81,177. Between 1911 and 1921 thousands of English immigrants arrived.

† Including almost 14,000,000 Catholic Irish, of Anglo-Saxon blood, in part.

† Mostly of Southern Irish stock. The Australians of Irish origin are largely the descendants of Irish political prisoners of pioneer days, who formed a large proportion of the early convict colony.

‡ At the Second International Eugenics Congress in New York, September, 1921, Professor Henry Fairfield Osborn declared that nearly half of the Nordic race is now to be found in the United States. In other words many so-called Nordics in Europe are actually Alpines.



## APPENDIX II

### BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Allemann, A., "Immigration and the Future American Race,"  
Popular Science Monthly, December, 1909.
- American Journal of Physical Anthropology, Smithsonian Inst.
- American Journal of Sociology.
- American Museum Journal.
- Balch, Emily G., "Our Slavic Fellow Citizens," 1910.
- Bancroft, Geo., "History of the Colonization of the United States."
- Beddoe, John, "The Anthropological History of Europe," 1912.
- Beer, George Louis, "The English-speaking Peoples," 1917.
- Boas, Franz, Various surveys, reports, investigations.
- Bolton, H. E. and Marshall, T. M., "The Colonization of North America," 1920.
- Brawley, Benj. Griffith, "A Short History of the American Negro," 1913.
- Bryce, James R., "Migrations of the Races of Men Considered Historically." (Cont. Rev., 1892).
- Burgess, Thos., "Greeks in America."
- Cable, George W., "The Creoles of Louisiana," 1884.
- Campbell, John C., "The Southern Highlander and His Homeland," 1921.
- Commons, John R., "Races and Immigrants in America."
- Cooley, Chas. H., "Genius, Fame and the Comparison of Races." Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Science, Vol. IX, May, 1897.
- Davenport, C. B., Investigations on Inheritance of Stature. (Geog. Rev.)
- Deniker, J., "Races of Man," 1901.
- Dos Passos, "The Anglo-Saxon Century."
- Eagle, Edw. E., "The Hope of the Future," 1921.
- Eno, Joel N., "The Norse-Saxon Element in the United States," Journal of American History, Vol. XII, 4th Quarter No. 4, 1918.
- Fairchild, Henry Pratt, "Immigration," 1913; "Greek Immigration to the United States."
- Faris, John T., "On the Trail of the Pioneers," 1920.
- Faust, Albert Bernhardt, "The German Element in the United States."
- Fish, Carl Russell, "Development of American Nationality" (Revised), 1917.
- Fishberg, Maurice, "The Jews—A Study of Race and Environment."
- Fosdick, Lucian F., "French Blood in America," 1906.
- Foster, Robert F., "Italian Emigration of Our Times," 1919.
- Geographical Review.
- Grant, Madison, "The Passing of the Great Race," 1916.
- Grolier Society, "The Book of History," 12 Volumes.

- Haddon, A. C., "Races of Man."
- Hall, Prescott F., "Immigration," 1908.
- Hanna, Chas. A., "The Scotch-Irish, or the Scot in North Britain, North Ireland and North America," 1902.
- Haskin, Frederic J., "The Immigrant."
- Hill, "The Public Domain and Democracy."
- Histories of the U. S., New England, Pennsylvania, Virginia, Carolinas, etc.
- Humphrey, Seth K., "Mankind," 1917.
- Hrdlicka, Various Surveys, Reports, Investigations.
- Jenks, Albert Ernest, "The Practical Value of Anthropology to Our Nation." *Science*, February 18, 1921, LIII, No. 1364.
- Jenks & Lauk, "The Immigration Problem: Based on the Report of the U. S. Immigration Commission."
- Johnson, Stanley C., "Immigration from the United Kingdom to North America."
- Kallen, Horace M., "Democracy vs. the Melting Pot—a Study of American Nationality", *The Nation*, February 18 and February 25, 1915.
- Lea, Homer, "The Day of the Saxon," 1912.
- Low, A. Maurice, "The American People," 1909.
- Maguire, J. F., "The Irish in America."
- Michaud, G. M. and Giddings, F. H., "What Shall We Be?" *Century*, March, 1903.
- Newton, A. P., "Puritan Colonization," 1914.
- Pearl, Raymond, and Reed, Lowell J., "On the Rate of Growth of the Population of the United States Since 1790 and its Mathematical Representation." *Proc. Nat. Ac. Sc.*, 1920, VI., No. 6.
- Ripley, William Z., "Races in the United States," *Atlantic Monthly*, 1908; "Race Factors in Labor Unions," *Atlantic Monthly*, 1904.
- Ripley, Wm. Z., "The European Population of the United States," *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland*, Vol. XXXVIII, 1908.
- Ripley, Wm. Z., "The Races of Europe," 1900.
- Roosevelt, Theodore, Address at Oxford, "Biological Analogies in History"; "Winning of the West."
- Ross, Edw. Alsworth, "Significance of Emigration."
- Semple, Ellen Churchill, "American History and its Geographic Conditions," 1903.
- Smith, W. G., "A Study in Canadian Immigration," 1921 (Canada).
- Sparks, Edwin Earle, "Expansion of the American People," 1900.
- Special Report of the Bureau of the Census on "A Century of Population Growth," 1909.
- Stoddard, Lothrop, "The Rising Tide of Color," 1920.
- Sullivan, Louis R., *American Museum Journal*, October, 1917.
- United States Bureau of Immigration, Annual Reports.
- United States Bureau of Statistics Reports.
- United States Census Reports.

United States Congress Documents and Reports.

United States Library of Congress: Book List on Immigration,  
1907.

Warne, Frank Julian, "The Slav Invasion and the Mine Workers,"  
1904.

Widney, Joseph P., "Race Life of the Aryan Peoples," 2 Vols.,  
1907.

Woodruff, Chas. E., "Expansion of Races."

American Journal of Sociology, July-May, 1916-1917.

Woolston, Howard B., "Rating the Nations."



# INDEX

## A

Abenaki, allied with French.... 143  
 Acadians .....42, 63, 66  
 Agassiz .....171  
 Albanians .....119, 120  
 Algonquin .....142  
 Alpine Race, 21, 23, 25, 26, 27,  
     131, 134, 135, 138, 193, 211  
     Describing Type of ..... 133  
     Habitat of ..... 134  
     Slav Language Developed by 139  
     In Russia ..... 139  
     In United States ..... 140  
     Immigrants of ....140, 191, 225  
     Among Armerians ..... 141  
     In Rome ..... 212  
     In Europe ..... 216  
     Future of ..... 231  
 America, 41, 93, 113, 119, 138,  
     195, 211, 213, 219  
     Haven of the Oppressed 3, 4, 7  
     Foreign Communities in... 9  
     Destiny of ..... 13  
     Colonization of ..... 29  
     Spirit of Liberty in ..... 39  
     Population of ..... 59  
     In Great War ..... 89  
     No Negro Policy in ..... 153  
     Cheap Labor in ..... 178  
     Jewish Organization in .... 180  
     Shared by Remote Races .. 182  
     In the Arts ..... 183  
 As An "Asylum" ..... 193  
 Anti-Semitism in ..... 194  
 Unemployment in ..... 201  
 Misguided Citizens of ..... 204  
 Selective Immigration for . 205  
 Civilization of ..... 207  
 Youthful Energy of ..... 208  
 Future Race in ..... 211  
 Foreigners in ..... 214  
 Leadership of ..... 216  
 Nordic Heritage of ..... 216  
 Pilgrims in ..... 219  
 Anglo-Saxon Insistence in.. 220  
 German Immigration to .. 225  
 Stability of ..... 227  
 American Ancestry of Creoles 207  
 American Backwoods ..... 87  
 American Birth .....105  
 American Children .....187, 188  
 American Citizen .....132, 230  
 American Colonies ..... 44  
 American Colonization Society 155  
 American Commonwealth .... 6  
 American Federation of Labor 189  
 American Government Officials  
     in Europe ..... 204  
 American House Girl ..... 190  
 American Indians (See Indians)  
 American Institutions ..... 195  
 Americanization, 6, 187, 188,  
     189, 210, 213  
 American Labor...189, 190,  
     200, 201, 202

American Law and Order .... 214  
 American Liberty ..... 32  
 American Life ..... 215  
 American Miners ..... 200  
 American Politicians ..... 10  
*American Review of Reviews*  
     14, 218  
 American Revolution, 33, 49, 56,  
     60, 67, 72, 73, 89, 108  
 Americans, 1, 3, 6, 9, 10, 12,  
     13, 16, 18, 30, 59, 60, 77, 79,  
     85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 91, 101,  
     103, 111, 119, 121, 129, 133,  
     147, 154, 161, 168, 170, 187,  
     189, 190, 191, 204, 210, 211,  
     214, 225, 231  
     In Florida .....67, 68  
     Native ..... 113  
     Departed ..... 124  
     Nordic Strain in ..137, 210, 212  
     Of Four Decades ..... 168  
     Of the Future ....168, 176, 177  
     Composition of ..... 173  
     Composition of ..... 173  
     Race Problem of ..... 175  
     In the Arts .....185, 191  
     Mountaineer ..... 197  
     Of Foreign Descent ..... 207  
     In Canada .....213, 219  
     White ..... 222  
     Anglo-Saxon ..... 226  
 American Schools ..... 211  
 American Secessionists ..... 226  
 American Skilled Workman... 203  
 American Stock ...7, 55, 185, 186  
 American Type ..... 213  
 American Workman ..... 114  
 Amerinds ..... 20  
     Study of ..... 145  
 Ancestral Stocks ..... 131  
 Andrews, Roy C. .... 20  
 Anglian Type ..... 197  
 Anglicans .....39, 60, 80  
 Anglo-American Accord ..... 221  
 Anglo-Nordics .....207, 209  
     Civilization of ..... 207  
     Idea of ..... 208  
     Nations of ..... 225  
 Anglonords .....207, 223  
 Anglo-Saxon Birthright ..... 218  
 Anglo-Saxon Blood in Gypsies 165  
 Anglo-Saxon Character ..... 66  
 Anglo-Saxon Conquest Over  
     Savagery ..... 4  
 Anglo-Saxon Ethics in United  
     States ..... 209  
 Anglo-Saxons ..21, 28, 29, 39,  
     89, 138, 143, 184, 186, 206,  
     89, 138, 143, 184, 186, 206,  
     207, 217  
     Instance of, in America.. 220  
     Mountaineer ..... 210  
 Anglo-Saxon Settlements .... 84  
 Anglo-Saxon Strain.....207, 226  
 Anglo-Saxon Territory ..... 225



Anthropology, 10, 17, 28, 131,	
132, 135, 169, 171, 197, 204	
Anthropometry .....	10, 129, 135
Anti-Restrictionists, 184, 185,	
187, 198, 231	
Anti-Semitism .....	194, 197
Arabs .....	22, 24
Assyroid .....	140
Blood of, in Persians .....	166
Immigrant .....	140
Ishmaelite .....	140
Joktanides .....	140
Traces of, in Negroes ....	152
Type of .....	140
Arkwright .....	202
Armenians, ...121, 122, 131, 166	
Of Hittite Descent .....	141
Admixture of, with Turks ..	165
"Proxy-Brides" Among.....	181
Armenoid Strain .....	134
Aryans, 20, 21, 26, 113, 119,	
121, 193, 228	
Slavic Languages Derived	
from .....	129
Strain of, in Persians..165, 166	
American Negro and South	
Italian Dialects Derived	
from .....	172, 173
Lingual Derivation from ...	209
Asiento .....	149
Ashkenazim Jews (see Jews)	121
Assyroids (Assyrioids), 25,	
131, 134, 140, 141, 211	
Characteristics of .....	134
Distribution of .....	135
In United States .....	140
Blood of, in Armenians ....	141

## B

Bahaman Negroes .....	200
Baltimore, Lord .....	60
Balts .....	26
In Russia .....	139
Bantu Negroes .....	131, 152
Barbadians .....	36, 56, 57
Basques .....	118
Beauregard, Gen., .....	208
Belgians .....	111, 207
Berbers .....	140
Negro Admixture with ....	152
Biology .....	6, 132, 171, 204, 214
"Birds of Passage".....120, 200	
Birth Rate—in City .....	125
Native .....	125
"Black Breed" of Scotland....	138
Boers, Bi-Lingual .....	223
Bohemians .....	119, 120
Bolshevism .....	3, 4, 5, 6, 27
Boone, Daniel .....	74, 86
Braddock's Road .....	74
British .....	115, 221
Garrison of .....	67
Rule of .....	72
British Ambassador .....	5
British Ancestry.....87, 108, 207	

British Association .....	2
British Dominions .....	5
British Forebears .....	89
British Government .....	102
British Immigrants .....	93, 95
British labor .....	201
British North America 94, 107,	
108, 112	
British Stock .....	100
Buffalo Bill Cody .....	86
Bulgars (Bulgarians) .....	22, 119
Bureau of American Ethnology	145
Burke, Edmund .....	12
Bushman Type Among West	
Indians .....	152

## C

Canada, 4, 50, 69, 70, 93, 94,	
101, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111,	
179, 218, 219, 223, 226	
French .....	138
Growth of .....	218
Habitable Land in, ... 169, 170	
Lingual Barrier in .....	219
Lower .....	138
Loyalty of.....217, 218, 225	
Relations of, with U. S....	225
Canadian Ancestry .....	207
Canadians .....	92, 112, 225
Bi-Lingual .....	223
British .....	94
English .....	111, 218, 219
French, 93, 112, 137, 206,	
218, 219	
Highland .....	50
Canucks .....	218
French .....	137
Carson, Kit .....	83, 86
Carthaginians .....	171
Cartwright, Sir R. ....	107
Catalans .....	25
Gentry of .....	138
Catholics .....	42, 60
German .....	206
In Maryland .....	39, 60
Irish.....43, 95, 102, 103, 206	
Mexican .....	147
Caucasians .....	20
Strain of .....	193
Cavaliers, 17, 24, 39, 57, 85,	
90, 100, 172, 207	
Celtic Origin..... 131, 207, 209	
Celts .....	21, 29, 47
Irish .....	43
Census 13, 14, 15, 16, 61, 71,	
78, 79, 92, 98, 111, 118, 125,	
127, 129, 147, 151, 152, 158	
Bureau of 13, 14, 15, 87, 120,	
165, 166	
First Official .....	39, 61, 62
Of Foreign Stocks .97, 126, 165	
Of 1910 .....	230
Of 1920 .....	199
Reports of .....	15, 17

Special Report of .....	61
Center of Population in 1920	178
Chaldeans .....	171
Chinese 17, 158, 159, 164, 174, 180, 228, 229	
Coolies Among 159, 161, 162, 193	
As Laborers on Railroads..	158
Population Growth of....	162, 163
Circassians .....	166
Mixed with Turks .....	165
Cockneys .....	24
Neolithic Type of .....	138
Collins, Michael .....	222
Colonial Aspect of U. S. ....	172
Colonies 33, 34, 43, 44, 46, 48, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 70, 72, 75, 90, 100, 101, 149, 178, 197, 206	
English .....	63, 70, 71, 73
Mainland .....	63
Population of .....	40
Seaboard .....	66
Southern .....	149
Colonists, in U. S. ....	137
In Canada .....	137
Conquistadors .....	171, 194
Contract Labor Law .....	178
Coolidge, Calvin .....	169
Cornish .....	110
In the Mines .....	199
Creoles, French ..	63, 67, 70, 72, 78
Spanish .....	63, 67, 72
Crockett, Davy .....	86
Cubans .....	118
Custer .....	84, 86
Cumberland Gap .....	74, 76
Cymry .....	28, 111
Czecho-Slovaks .....	119

## D

Danes .....	28, 106
Death Rate .....	182
Declaration of Independence..	208
Dissenters .....	58
Division of Distribution .....	188
Dominicans .....	63
Douglas, Stephen A. ....	149
Durham, Lord .....	94
Dravidians, Mixture of, with Persians .....	166
Hindu .....	166
(See also Hindus and East Indians)	
Dutch 35, 40, 41, 46, 49, 85, 93, 111, 208	
Immigrant .....	137
Dutch West India Company ..	148

## E

Eastern Europe, 3, 5, 9, 22, 96, 100, 101, 112, 113, 114, 122, 135	
Immigrants from .....	139, 193

Laborers from .....	200
Stocks from .....	211
Eastern Europeans 118, 119, 124, 176, 178, 187, 188, 189, 190, 193, 230, 231, 232	
Influx of .....	126
Prospective Emigration of..	179
Undesirable Element of ....	177
Women Among .....	180
East Indians .....	166, 228
(See also Dravidians and Hindus).	
Egyptians .....	171
Egyptologists .....	173
Emigration .....	101, 179
Future .....	179
England 4, 5, 12, 33, 35, 66, 67, 70, 78, 85, 89, 91, 101, 102, 135, 222, 223, 224, 226	
In Slave Trade .....	149
Offshoots of .....	208
Bound to Northwest Europe	209
In the Arts .....	184, 185
English Language....	126, 137, 209
English 12, 47, 64, 68, 72, 73, 74, 77, 78, 79, 88, 92, 94, 207	
Settlement of .....	32, 33, 34
Colonist 34, 35, 36, 38, 40, 43, 46, 48, 49	
Rule of .....	41, 55, 58
West Indian .....	58
Calvinist .....	60
Policy Toward Blacks.....	153
Nordic Strain in .....	138
Planter .....	197
In Mines .....	200
Dominions of .....	209
In Canada .....	219
English-Scotch Border .....	197
English-Speaking Nations 208, 218, 221, 223, 226	
Erie Canal .....	74, 75, 94
Esths .....	26, 120
Eurasian Type .....	160, 161
Executive Zionist Committee..	195
Exploiters .....	191, 199, 230

## F

Fairchild, H. P. ....	186
Faneuil .....	208
Farragut .....	208
Far West .....	120, 135, 220
Anglo-Saxons in .....	143
Reservations in .....	144, 145
Fayolle, Marshal .....	219
Filipinos .....	166
Finno-Ugrians .....	26, 119, 131
Finns .....	26, 41, 119, 120
Flemish .....	29, 111
Forbes' Road .....	74
"Forty-niners" .....	81
France, Nordic .....	137, 172
Central .....	128
Iberian .....	172

Gentry of .....	207
Birth Rate in .....	224
Franciscans .....	63
Frémont, John C. ....	86
French Ancestry .....	207
French 21, 29, 58, 65, 66, 68, 70, 71, 72, 73, 77, 78, 143, 207, 208	
Rivalry with .....	38
Protestant .....	42
Creole 63, 67, 70, 72, 78, 206	
Immigrant .....	137
In Canada .....	138
In the West .....	142
French Canadians 93, 109, 110, 112	
Immigrant .....	137
In New England .....	206

## G

Gaels .....	28
Gallegos, Gentry of .....	138
Geddes, Sir A. ....	5
Georgians .....	165, 166
Admixture of, with Turks... 165	
German Ancestry .....	207, 222, 223
Germanic Origin .....	138, 209
Germans 17, 21, 26, 27, 28, 29, 50, 52, 53, 54, 63, 67, 70, 74, 85, 105, 108, 109, 110, 111, 184, 208, 221	
Pro- .....	15, 104, 226
American .....	15, 226
Settlement of .... 24, 26, 40, 50	
Palatine .....	43, 51
Mennonite .. 43, 50, 96, 105, 108	
Known as "Pennsylvania Dutch" .....	46, 50
Pietist .....	50
Labadist .....	50
Moravian .....	54
Lutheran .....	60
Rosicrusian .....	50
Hessian .....	55
On the Mississippi .....	69
Immigrant 87, 92, 96, 104, 137, 180	
In Russia .....	139
In World War .....	210
Goethe .....	209
Gothic Gentry, in Lombardy.. 139	
In Southern France .....	129
Goths, in Spain .....	25
Invasions of .....	138
Graeco-Latins, in U. S. .... 140	
Greeks 22, 115, 117, 118, 120, 123, 171, 209	
Church of .....	122
Immigrant .....	123
Language of .....	131
Women Among, in U. S.... 180	
Gypsies .....	165

## H

Harding, Warren G. ....	7
Heredity .....	133, 168, 169, 170

Herkimer .....	208
Hessians .....	55
Hindus .....	166, 180, 193
(See also Dravidians and East Indians)	
Hottentots .....	152
Houston, Sam .....	86
Huguenots 24, 36, 40, 41, 42, 43, 46, 55, 57, 85, 137, 208	
Calvinist .....	60
Hurons .....	143
Hylobatic Ancestry .....	2

## I

Iberians..... 25, 28, 29, 211	
Type of .....	133
Represented by Silurian Type in Welsh! .....	138
Represented by Picts in Scot- land .....	138
from the Midi; in U. S.... 140	
In France .....	172
Immigrant .....	225
Icelanders .....	106, 107
Immigration 7, 19, 24, 91, 92, 109, 115, 168, 200, 215	
Figures of .....	129
Bureau of .... 123, 131, 165, 188	
Assisted .....	178
In the Future .....	178
Problem of .....	182, 202, 232
Of the Present .....	186
Laws of .....	191
Selective .....	191, 205, 232
Indentured .....	199
Nordic .....	225
Emergency Laws Relating to 230	
Inbreeding .....	189
Indentured Servants .....	37, 57
Indians (American) 38, 40, 43, 45, 53, 57, 58, 64, 67, 68, 71, 79, 82, 83, 84, 101, 193, 228	
Osage .....	80
Wars of .....	82
At Roanoke and Plymouth.. 142	
Of Great Plains .....	143
On Reservations .....	144
Rate of Increase of .....	145
Admixture of, with Whites. 145	
Halfbreeds Among .....	145
Eager to Emigrate .....	146
Indo-Aryans .....	171
Inter-Racial Council .....	188
Irish 16, 17, 40, 47, 55, 85, 90, 100, 102, 103, 104, 111, 112, 137, 208	
So-Called Republic of .....	16
Gaelic .....	16
Catholic .....	16, 43, 102
Immigrant .. 87, 92, 94, 95, 186	
Nordic Blood in .....	138
"Shanty" (Neanderthal) .... 138	
In the Mines .....	200
In Labor Ranks .....	201

Celtic .....	209
In World War .....	210
Of New England .....	210
In Canada .....	219
American .....	221, 226
Bi-Lingual .....	223
Sympathizers with .....	226
Irish Ancestry .....	207
Irish Free State .....	222
Irish Vote .....	102, 103, 221
Iroquois .....	142
League of .....	143
Italian Renaissance .....	23, 184
Italians 21, 31, 96, 97, 114, 115,	
116, 120, 172, 186	
Southern.....	117, 118, 172, 194
Immigrant .....	123
Women Among .....	124, 180
Grandchildren of .....	127
Northern .....	185

## J

Japanese 17, 159, 164, 193, 216,	
228, 232	
"Picture Brides" of .....	160
Population Growth of .....	160
Penetration of .....	163
Birth Rate of .....	164
As Leaders .....	172
Jefferson, Thos. ....	80
Jesuits .....	63, 69
Jewry .....	195
Jews 10, 22, 27, 40, 55, 56, 96,	
97, 123, 131	
Ashkenazim .....	27, 140, 193
Sephardim .....	27, 140, 212
German .....	96, 196
Communities of .....	122
Russian .....	122, 140, 171, 196
Polish 122, 125, 140, 171, 172,	
185, 196	
Grandchildren of .....	127
Women Among .....	124
Type of .....	140
Immigrant .....	140
Iberian-Assyroid .....	140
Rumanian .....	140
Hungarian .....	140
Mongrelization of .....	171
Western European .....	171
As Leaders .....	172
Organization of, in America	180
Immigration of .....	180
Eastern European .....	180, 196
In the Arts .....	185
Settlement of, in Brazil ....	194
As a Sect .....	194
Ukranian .....	195
Of Pure Race .....	196
Attempt to Convert .....	213
As Permanent Population...	231
Possible Emigration of .....	231
"Jim Crowism" .....	153
Judaism .....	124, 194
Jugoslavs .....	12, 119, 120

## K

Khazars .....	22, 121
Blood of, in Jews .....	140
"Know-Nothings" .....	95
Koreans .....	164, 166
Ku Klux Klan .....	50, 149
Kurds .....	165, 166
Latin Americans .....	115
Latins 21, 58, 115, 123, 184,	
194, 201	
Immigrant .....	123, 124, 127, 139
Blood of .....	126
Language of .....	131
In Barbary .....	180
In Latin America .....	180
In the Arts .....	185

## L

Letto-Lithuanians ....	26, 119, 137
Immigrant .....	140
Letts .....	120
Levantines .....	140
"Proxy-Brides" of .....	181
Lewis and Clark Expedition ..	86
Liberian Exodus Stock Company	150
Liberia, Founding of .....	155
Lincoln, Abraham .....	87
Heritage of .....	136
Lingual Communities .....	120
Literacy Test .....	203
Lithuanians .....	120
Livingston, Robert .....	51
Lombard Gentry .....	139

## M

Macdonalds .....	49
Magna Charta .....	208
Magyars 22, 26, 114, 119, 120,	
172, 199, 201	
Mankind .....	136, 137
Maoris .....	166
Marquette .....	64
Masonic Order .....	56
Mediterranean Region .....	216
Mediterraneans 21, 23, 24, 29,	
131, 135	
Type of .....	133
Admixture of, with Armenoids	134
Ancient .....	134
Habitat of .....	134
Immigrant .....	191
In Southern Italy .....	172
Captive in Rome .....	212
Departure of, in Future ....	231
"Melting Pot" .....	30, 168, 207
Mental Tests .....	203
Mexican Border .....	119
Mexicans .....	17, 96, 200
Indian Blood in .....	146
Peon .....	146, 147
Immigrant .....	147
In Southwest .....	147



In United States .....	148
Character of .....	148
Mexican War .....	97
Middle West .....	118, 151, 192
Reservations in .....	144
Minorcans .....	67
Missions, Spanish .....	58, 63, 64, 65, 66
French .....	58
"Molly Maguires" .....	102
Mongolians .....	121
In United States .....	140
Strain of, in Hindus .....	166
Mongrelism .....	175
Moors .....	171
Mormons .....	81, 83, 227
Moslems .....	165

## N

<i>Nation, The</i> .....	186
National Commission on Industrial Relations .....	192
National Highway .....	74
Nationality .....	216
National Lead Company .....	201
Naturalized Citizens, Departing .....	123
Neanderthal Type, in Irish .....	138
Near East, Proxy-Brides from .....	181
Negroes 17, 20, 50, 57, 67, 68, 69, 131, 150, 151, 152, 154, 168, 172, 193, 194	
Attitude Toward .....	147, 174
First Shipload of .....	148
Relations of, with Whites .....	149
West Indian .....	151, 152
Origin of .....	152
Sudanese .....	152
Bantu .....	152
Mulatto .....	152
Problem of .....	152, 157
Policy Toward .....	153, 155
Rate of Increase of .....	153, 154
Immigration of .....	154, 161
Future Colonies of .....	156
Economic State of .....	156
Superstitions of .....	157
Folk-Lore of .....	158
In Gainful Occupations .....	200
Negroid Blood, in "Bravas" .....	118
In Persians .....	166
In Slaves of Southern Italy .....	172
Neolithic Type, in Cockneys .....	138
New England 16, 34, 35, 38, 44, 45, 46, 48, 52, 54, 56, 72, 75, 78, 79, 88, 93, 105, 106, 110, 111, 114, 118, 120, 135, 148, 218	
Founding of .....	4, 31
Yankees of .....	56
Puritans of .....	57, 74, 80
Irish in .....	103, 210
Cotton Mills of .....	110
French Canadians in .....	206
"New" Immigration, 120, 123, 126, 127, 189, 195, 203	
<i>New York Herald</i> .....	199

Nigritians .....	131
Non-Aryans .....	228
Non-English Speaking Workers .....	192
Nordic Nations .....	209, 223
Nordics 16, 17, 22, 23, 24, 25, 28, 80, 85, 131, 134, 138, 139, 149, 171, 193, 194, 197, 207, 208, 209, 211, 217, 222, 223, 231	
Type of .....	20, 133, 136
Seafaring .....	31
Pre-Teutonic .....	133
Habitat of .....	134
New England .....	135
Types of, Within Latin or Slav Communities .....	128
Strain of, in Baltic Gentry .....	138, 139
In France .....	172
As World Leaders .....	172
Heritage of .....	176, 209
Future of .....	176, 205
English-Speaking .....	207
Race Thought of .....	208
From Northwest Europe .....	208
Point of View with Respect to American .....	211
In United States .....	212, 214
European .....	216
Continental .....	223
Oversea .....	223
Immigration of .....	225
Birth Rate of .....	225
In North America .....	225
Race Consciousness of .....	226
Race Ties of .....	226
Temperament of .....	227
Blood of, in Colonial Forefathers .....	232
Nords, Continental .....	224
Normans ... 29, 39, 137, 207, 209	
Norse (Norsemen) 28, 29, 30, 42, 106, 137, 209	
North Africa .....	194
People of .....	172
North America 208, 217, 218, 219, 223, 224	
Colonization of 31, 32, 37, 58, 63	
Supremacy in .....	67, 70
For the Nordics .....	180
White Nations of .....	216
Northerners .....	76, 77, 78
Northwest .....	120
French Canadians in .....	145
Northwest Europe 23, 40, 95, 96, 100, 112, 170, 185, 208, 217	
Northwest Europeans 131, 137, 201, 230, 231	
Assimilable .....	178, 179

## O

Ohio Company .....	74
Oregon Trail .....	74
Orientalis .....	193
Ostjuden .....	194



P

Pearson, Karl	2, 3, 10, 169
Penitentes	148
Penn, William	41, 50
"Pennsylvania Dutch"	46, 50, 80, 150
Persians	21, 165
Phœnicians	171
Picts	28, 138
Pike, Gen. Zebulon	80, 86
Pilgrims	4, 16, 24, 27, 32, 33, 39, 59, 88, 91
Pilgrim Tercentenary	4, 5, 219, 226
Plantations	36
Poles (Polaks)	27, 96, 119, 120, 199, 222
Polynesians	20
Pope	2
Porto Ricans	200
Portuguese	25, 115, 118
"Proxy-Brides" of	181
Pre-Nordics	138
Presbyterians	43, 46, 47, 49, 80, 213
Scotch	57
Scotch-Irish	150
Pre-Teutonic Nordics	133, 139
Protestants	42
In Maryland	60
From Ireland	94, 95
Anglo-Saxon	206
German	206
Provençals	115, 138
"Proxy-Brides"	181
Puritans	4, 17, 24, 33, 35, 39, 56, 60, 74, 75, 79, 80, 85, 100, 207, 210

Q

Quakers	35, 39, 43, 46, 52, 57, 60, 80, 85, 150
---------	---

R

Race, Factor of	136
Homogeneity of	169
Affinity of	171
Pride of	174
Depreciation of	205
Unity of	222
Heritage of	225
Racial Composition	132
Of Americans	129
Racial Groups	141
Rate of Increase	177
Native Compared with Foreign	182
Recollet Monks	69
Redskins	32, 83
(See also Indians)	
Republic	220, 229
Welfare of	191
Race Heritage in	225

Restrictionists	185
Revere, Paul	208
<i>Revue des Deux Mondes</i>	219
Romans	23, 28, 171
Roosevelt, Theodore	183, 208
Royalists	33, 67, 73, 108
Rumanians	115, 119
Russians	96, 119, 120
Nordic	139

S

Santa Fé Trail	74, 80, 81, 197, 198
Saxons	135
Type of	197
Scandinavian Ancestry	207
Scandinavians	21, 26, 27, 92, 93, 96, 106, 107, 109, 110, 208
Immigrant	137
Schurman, J. G.	214
Scotch	46, 48, 49, 50, 93, 107, 108, 112, 132, 137
Lowland	47, 48, 108
Highland	48, 73, 108, 137
Ulster	48, 108
(See also Scotch-Irish)	
Dissenters Among	49
Jacobites Among	49
Clansmen Among	49
Macdonald Clan of	49
Presbyterian	57
In West Florida	67
Nordic Blood in	138
"Black Breed" of	138
In the Mines	200
In Canada	219
Scotch-Irish	24, 36, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 60, 74, 85, 94, 137, 150, 208
Presbyterian	60, 80
Secessionists	226
Seminole Wars, Negro Influence in	150
Semites	23, 113, 121, 122, 126
Armenoid	134
Traces of, in Negroes	152
Immigrant	191
Sentimentalists	191, 193, 230
Sephardim	121
(See also Jews)	
Settlers	65, 69, 72
"Wyoming"	56
From New England	71
Pioneer	82
Early	137
Shakespeare	209
Sheridan	208
Sicilians	12, 117
Sinn Fein	15, 16, 102, 210, 221, 222
Sioux	143
Slaves	57
Slave Trade	149
Abolition of	154

Slavs 119, 120, 123, 124, 126, 131, 135, 172, 184, 185, 186, 201, 213	213
Type of .....	25, 104, 114
Immigrant 123, 124, 127, 139, 140	140
Women Among .....	124
Language of .....	139
Nordic Strain in .....	139
Russian .....	163
In Siberia .....	180
In the Arts .....	185
Expansion of .....	194
Sokolov, Nahum .....	195
South 36, 37, 39, 44, 76, 88, 114, 168, 174, 220	220
Race Question in ....	149, 162
Migration of Negroes from .....	150, 151
Cavaliers in .....	172
In Civil War .....	212
South America .....	193, 227
Southerners .....	77, 78, 88
Colonial .....	39
Cattlemen Among .....	38
Royalist .....	73
Southern Europe 3, 5, 9, 24, 100, 101, 112, 113, 114	114
Immigration from .....	129
Laborer from .....	200
Stocks from .....	211
Southern Europeans 118, 124, 176, 178, 187, 188, 189, 190, 193, 230, 231, 232	232
Influx of .....	126
Immigrant .....	139, 193
Undesirable Element of ....	177
Possible Emigration of ....	179
Women Among .....	180
"Proxy-Brides" of .....	181
Southwest .....	120
Tribes of .....	143
Reservations in .....	145
Mexicans in .....	146, 147
Spanish (Spaniards) 25, 58, 63, 64, 67, 68, 73, 77, 115, 118, 208	208
Missions of .....	63, 64
Expeditions of .....	64
Frontier of .....	65
Posts of .....	66
In Florida .....	67
Minorcan .....	67
Settlements of .....	69
Garrisons of .....	70
Creole .....	72
Explorers of .....	80
In Southwest .....	143
"Proxy-Brides" Among ....	181
Spencer, Herbert .....	171
Sudanese .....	131, 132, 152
(See also Negroes)	
Sulpician Monks .....	69
Susquehanna Company .....	56
Swedes ....12, 40, 41, 46, 85	106
Swiss .....	40, 53, 54, 105
Swiss Ancestry .....	207

Syrians, Immigrant .....	122
Type of .....	140

T

Tartars .....	23, 166
In Russia .....	139
Blood of, in Persians and	
Kurds .....	166
Teutons .....	23, 28, 131
"Toryism", .....	208, 221, 226
Troglodytes .....	2
Turks .....	17, 165, 166
Crossing of, in Armenians ..	141
High Caste .....	166
"Proxy-Brides" Among .....	181

## U

Ukrainians .....	27, 139
"Underground Railroad" .....	149
United States 9, 12, 14, 27, 29, 58, 77, 80, 83, 84, 87, 88, 90, 91, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 101, 102, 105, 108, 109, 110, 111, 116, 118, 119, 120, 123, 129, 156, 188, 194, 195, 200, 204, 212,, 219, 221, 223, 225, 229	
Great Crisis of .....	2, 3, 7
Distribution of Immigrants in .....	9
Census of .....	61
Bureau of Statistics of .....	90
Jewish Farmers in .....	122
Not Heterogeneous As Yet..	132
British Blood in .....	138
Iberian Stock in .....	140
Immigration to .....	140
White Population in .....	141
Indians in .....	142
Chinese in .....	158, 159
Colored Population in .....	166
Habitable Land in .....	169, 170
Intermarriage in .....	173
Future of People of .....	177
Assisted Immigration into ..	178
Immigrant Labor in .....	179
Can Choose Immigrants ...	180
Discrimination in .....	194
Backward Nordics in .....	197
Inhabitants in .....	199
Exports from .....	201
Observers from, in Europe ..	203
Race Depreciation in .....	205
Old Stock in .....	206
Anglo-Saxon Ethics in ....	209
Resources of .....	217
Policy of .....	218
Population of .....	220
Influence of .....	222
And Canada .....	225
Hyphenates in .....	226
As Pivot of World .....	227
Low Types in .....	228
New England .....	56, 57
Connecticut .....	56

## V

Vikings .....	135
Varangians, in Russia .....	139
Voodoo, Among Negroes ....	157

## W

Walloons .....	25, 26, 40, 111
Washington, George, Heritage of	136
Wells, H. G. ....	173
Welsh 43, 44, 55, 107, 110, 137,	219
Nordic Blood in .....	138
Silurian Types of .....	138
In the Mines .....	199, 200
"Welsh Barony" .....	44
Western Reserve .....	74

West Indians, English .....	58
Enslaved .....	68
Immigrant (Negro) .....	68, 152
West Indies .....	36, 72, 115
"Wetbacks" .....	147
White Russians .....	27
World War 4, 7, 89, 108, 113,	201, 227
Negro Labor During .....	151
Mountaineers in .....	198
Result of .....	216
Wilderness Road .....	74, 76
Williams, Roger .....	55
Wilson, Woodrow .....	232
Wood, F. A. ....	171
Wood, Leonard .....	179
"Wyoming Settlers" .....	56
Y	
Yankees .....	74, 80, 150, 210











